

2

三木なずな  
イラスト▼魔太郎

リアルで  
レベル上げしたら  
チートな人生  
ほぼ  
Real de Level age shitara  
Hobo cheat na  
Jinsei ni natta.  
になった



# **I BECAME A LIVING CHEAT**

**–Riaru de Reberu Age Shitara Hobo Chītona Jinsei ni Natta–**

**- Volume 2 -**

**AUTHOR:**

**Miki Nazuna**

**ARTIST:**

**魔太郎**

**[ Translated by: Light Novels Translations ]**



摇篮、皓白、琴音、鈴音、風音、  
そして青葉。

じゅうに しま ゆり かこ  
双六島摇篮

はや かわ さん し まい  
早川三姉妹  
こと な すず ね かざ ね  
(琴音、鈴音、風音)

あすま や こ はく  
四阿皓白

六人は、惜しげもなく  
裸体を湯気に晒している。

みや ぎ あお ば  
宮城青葉

I BECAME A LIVING CHEAT

LIGHTNOVELTRANSLATIONS.COM





スーレム持ちなのと  
純情なんだな

あお やま あき なみ  
青山秋波

なつ の たい よう  
夏野太陽

I BECAME A LIVING CHEAT

LIGHTNOVELSTRANSLATIONS.COM

# CHAPTER 47

## THE SEVEN BRIDES IN TAIYOU'S CASTLE

---

In a corner of the residential area during the day time.

The vending machines were lined up together. The things place inside of them were all best selling items by the famous manufacturers, and it was a line-up that would sell without much trouble even if no advertisement is done.

Although the line-up was quite standard, the price it had was absolutely not the normal prices. The price that was attached to the buttons were all at 100 yen. (*TL: 100 yen is approx 1 USD*). From the carbonated drinks which was at least 500ml to the corn soup and even the sweet red-bean soups, all of the commodities had a price range as little as 100 yen per piece.

Not only was the prices unusually low but the vending machines were place in quite the popular location. In this place, a person named Natsuno Taiyou and the Fairy Hera was here.

Taiyou placed a 100 yen coin in the vending machine. Although all the buttons lit up, Taiyou doesn't press the buttons, instead he pulls the lever to refund his coin. And then the 100 yen coin which was returned to him was once again inserted into the vending machine! The moment the buttons light up, he pulls the lever to refund his money.

The coins were put in, and then the change is pulled out.

The coin was put back in and then the change is pulled out again.

This seemingly useless repetitive set of movements were consistently repeatedly as he performed the actions in silence.

"You over there, what are you doing?"

"Ack"

Taioyu is called by someone from behind and he very slowly turned around. The

person who stood behind him was the familiar appearance of a uniform wearing man, or more commonly known as a police officer.

The young policeman seemed to be filled with a sense of justice and a sense of duty, he was looking at Taiyou like he was a suspicious person.

“You... I feel like I’ve seen you before. Have we met before at a different place?”

“Nono, I have never been graced with your esteemed presence in my life, yes yes”

“Taiyou-chan your Japanese is becoming really funny desuyo～”

Hera who was floating next to him pointed this fact out. Naturally the policeman couldn’t see her appearance, so he continued to question Taiyou.

“Well whatever. More importantly what are you doing? Are you perhaps trying to look for spare change from the machines?”

“Please I’m not doing that. Umm..... All I am doing is putting my own money in and, then taking it out, and then putting it back in again...”

“.....”

The young policeman looked at Taiyou with incredibly suspicious eyes, as he slowly moved his hand towards his wireless radio and started to speak in it.

“Reporting in, I am at the foot of the Seikasono Mountain, I’ve detected a suspicious person”

“I’m telling you, you’ve got it all wrong”

Taiyou objects in frustration and he unintentionally hit the vending machine. If it was a little while ago, it would have been to the extent that the vending machine experienced a little shake, but the him right now was a level 7 power fighter.

In just one blow, the vending machine broke down and started to spout out smoke.

“A-are you attempting to resist?”



“Ah..... no this is...”

Taiyou was trying to give an explanation, but the policemen were already beginning to gather around him. The speed in which they gathered together was so fast, like when gangsters called their members. If he was caught right here, without a doubt he was going to be lectured harshly.

No, this time around, he actually damaged the vending machine and broke it, so he might not get away with just a warning. Thinking about the possibility of something like that happening, he grabbed the bag on his feet and immediately ran away as fast as he could.

Behind him, he could hear the angry shouts of the policemen and their footsteps. In order to shake them off, he ran at full speed across the residential area in broad daylight.

Although he did hear the policemen shouting and several horns were ringing, the sound gradually got smaller and before long the sounds all completely disappeared. Somehow he managed to safely escape from the policemen chasing him.

Taiyou arrived to a certain building that wasn't his apartment... It was a building enclosed in all its sides by a wall at the height level of a person's waist, and the wooden building which was approximately two stories tall and it had a garden which was unusual for this day and age.

It was the kind of place that he imagined a 20 year old widow woman to be, she would be wearing an apron and sweeping the leaves with a broom. But what stood there wasn't a young widow but instead it was a lolibaba.

“Ohh, You've finally come back”

Whilst standing at the entrance of the building, Azumaya Kohaku was smiling radiantly as she welcomed Taiyou back. Although her limbs were under developed and was that of a young girls, her intellect and her manner of walking was that of an adult.

“You took such a long time for shopping, did you perhaps lose your way back?”

Kohaku was asking him a question, and Hera who was flying next to him came out and

answered instead.

“I’m so sorry nanodesu～, it was all my fault nanodesu～”

“Hou, did you have some sort of a secret date or something?”

“That’s not it desuyo, I was training together with Taiyou-chan in order to raise his level desu. But in the middle of it we were interrupted by the police officers so we couldn’t increase it”

“I see, no matter what age we are in, the officials of the country are always dogs who do unnecessary things, so it can’t be helped”

Kohaku nods whilst giggling to herself.

“Well, I’m not too worried, I’m sure I will get the chance to level sooner or later. I already know how to do it so I can go back and do it whenever I want to. More importantly, take this”

Whilst he says so, he handed the plastic bag in his hands to Kohaku. Although Taiyou was being asked by the three sisters and Kohaku to do a bit of shopping, Hera taught him the way to level up to level 8 along the way, and they ended up trying to gain experience.

It was piling up his experience by performing the tedious repetitive work. Most normal people would be discouraged in doing such a repetitive act that yields nothing but frustration, however for Taiyou who was able to level up in real life by performing these acts, it was not at all a bother for him. Therefore, he was thinking of raising his level directly to level 8 but he was obstructed by the policemen who happened to pass by chance and he had to retreat reluctantly.

Kohaku was glancing into the plastic bag which he gave to her. After taking the goods, she asked him a question.

“Come to think of it, you’ve never explained how your levelling thing works, right?”

“I guess I haven’t eh”

“There is a relation with the existence of this girl here right?”



“That’s correct nanodesu～”

“In that case, I certainly would like to know more about it”

Kohaku was looking straight at Taiyou as she asked for permission.

“Is it alright?”

“Let’s go inside first”

Taiyou turned towards the building.

“I should also explain to Kotone and the others”

Kohaku nodded her head in understanding.

The three people head towards the building together as the main entrance door was open and they entered inside. As soon as the door was opened they entered a room like a sort of lobby and there was also a kind of terrace. Furthermore, there were eight rooms connected to the lobby. He was not yet accustomed to being in this place, and Taiyou began to reminisce about yesterday’s events.

Yesterday: Late into the night. Kohaku took him to this place. After Taiyou had fully explained who Kohaku was to the three sisters, and then explaining the circumstances in which they met and becoming acquainted with each other, Kohaku proposed to move locations.

At any rate, there were five people in his small one room apartment and there was no way they could all fit in there. After hearing about this, Kohaku told him that she knew of a “wide and spacious place”. The place she took him to was an old yet spacious building. And so that is how they got here...

“Ah, Taiyou-san, welcome home”

Taiyou who had entered the building was greeted by the smallest of the three sisters. Kazane had a dustcloth in her hand and she seemed to have just finished cleaning the terrace area.

“How surprising”

Taiyou says this, and as he looked around the vicinity, his face had an astounded expression.

“It’s so much cleaner than before I went out. What happened?”

“I cleaned around a little bit”

“A little?”

Taiyou still had his dumbfounded expression as he turned around the terrace and had a good look. Since the time he arrived her last night, and just before he went out a little while ago...

The building was covered in dust and cobwebs, however now the area was completely clean from any sort of dust and it was extremely spotless. Remembering seeing this somewhere on the TV Taiyou traced his fingers along the window frame, curtain rails and the ventilating opening of the air conditioner. Even a teasing sister-in-law who would always complain about the situation of a house could not voice a single word against how clean the place was.

“Isn’t it just spectacular workmanship? I have just been looking at her from beginning to end and it feels like I am seeing some sort of magic happen or a trick of some sort nojya. It would seem that these three sisters are really good at housework jya”

“Nono, this is no longer at the level of mere housework, this is more like they are renovation experts”

“I completely agree jya, this is surely the workmanship of a master level artistan”

Taiyou was making a retort at her modesty and Kohaku was agreeing with him with a serious look. That was just how amazing the girl’s cleaning skills were. Being overly praised by the two people in front of her, she was feeling really bashful. Kazane and Kohaku was almost the same height. Kazane asked Kohaku a question.

“Umm, Kohaku-san. Is it really ok for us to use this place?”

Kazane seemed to be apologetic. When they arrived here last night Kohaku told them “You can stay for as long as you’d like” to the three girls. They were indirectly connected to the Blood Soul plan and they were also women who had relations with



Taiyou. And that's the reason Kohaku proposed this idea to Taiyou, but Kazane seemed to be a little uncomfortable in intruding on Kohaku's place. To such a Kazane, Kohaku answered her with a clear face.

"When a house isn't inhabited by people, it deteriorates at a surprisingly fast pace"

"This place... Hasn't been used in a long time right?"

"Yeah. If people were to live in it, it would actually make it rejuvenated just like it did today nojya"

"But....."

"There is no need for you to feel uncomfortable, alright?"

Kohaku cuts her words there and Hera who was looking at her surroundings were suddenly gripped hard.

"We are after all comrades who are able to see this girl jya..... Would such a reason be insufficient?"

Kohaku was smiling broadly as she said this and speaking as if she was content at the idea of being comrades. Although for a moment Kazane had a surprised expression as her eyes opened wide, she immediately changed her expression into that of comprehension

Being able to see Hera—Meaning that they were people who have kissed Taiyou.

"Ah..."

"Are you unhappy?"

"No, Not at all! I'm perfectly content!"

"In that case, please take care of me from now on"

Kohaku was smiling. Perhaps they heard the conversation down stairs, in the next moment the door opens from the second floor and Kotone and Suzune's makes their appearance. The two people descend the stairs that had a gentle curve to it as they

joined with the group of people gathered below. Kotone stood in front of Kohaku as she began to speak.

“Kohaku-san, I think I saw it before but I believe there was a signboard around the table here somewhere. Does this place have a name or something?”

“Yes it did, I don’t remember all the details but, if I’m not mistaken it was called rokumei-kan (*mansion*) or was it the moment castle?” (*TL Rokumeikan seems to be a building built in 1883 July 7 a very iconic building*)

“Ohh, it’s a one-time mansion desune～”

“I don’t think it’s either of them! Although it might resemble the latter it would be bad if that’s the case!”

Hera was just responding to the sensitive iconic building names with an overjoyed reaction, whilst Taiyou was responding by quickly retorting the statements.

“Seriously though, what is it?”

“Don’t be like that, I don’t really remember exactly what it was called no jya”

“Eh?”

“I didn’t use this place that much, and besides I let someone else manage it jya. As you have seen it’s a really old place and quite a trivial one at that”

“I see”

“If you guys insist on it having a name then, I think it will be good if we can give a new name “

“Is that alright? “

“Umu, if you’d like then this time around we can really name it the moment castle “

“You are still on to that aren’t cha! But seriously if you name it that, I will get angry okay?”



“Is that so? I thought that it was a masterpiece name deserving of respect, and I can proudly leave it to the future generation with such a name”

“Anyways, let’s get a different one”

As Taiyou said this, everyone was tilting their heads as they thought of a name. Before long, Hera opens her mouth.

“I think it will be really good to call it Taiyou’s Castle～!”

Hera’s whole face was smiling as she gave this suggestion, and everyone else was just blankly staring at her in puzzlement.



**I BECAME A LIVING CHEAT**

LIGHTNOVELSTRANSLATIONS.COM



# CHAPTER 48

## EVERYTHING IN HER POSSESSION

---

“Taiyou’s Castle?”

Taiyou was the first to react and question Hera’s idea. His eye brows were puckered up and he had a dubious expression on his face. This reaction wasn’t just from Taiyou, even Kohaku and the three sisters had similar confused expressions on their faces. Seeing their reaction, Hera proudly puffs out her chest as she began to explain.

“Yes desu~, Taiyou-chan is the king of this castle so, it should be Taiyou’s castle desu. Taiyou’s fortress and or Taiyou’s tower are also really good names desuyo~”

“Why is it that you always like to joke around so much”

Taiyou reprimanded her resolutely and gave her a slap on the back. Although she flew away quite far whilst spinning around the air, she returned almost immediately whilst flying buoyantly towards the group as if nothing had happened.

Seeing Hera act like this, Taiyou was starting to experience a headache. Taiyou was thinking to himself.....“Lately the amount of women around me that like to joke around with this kind of thing was becoming way too commonplace”.

Although it was overly apparently that Hera and Kohaku were both quite straight forward in their conversations, even Sakura who liked to play around with her words quite often used borderline inappropriate jokes. Not to mention Shirokiyami, although she didn’t really speak much words, some of the things she says can be unfathomably destructive.

They all had their own frightening implications. If things were left as they were now, Taiyou was afraid that sooner or later, people around him would start saying that, he was some sort of dark evil-doer. He secretly thought to himself that he must remain even more vigilant from now on.

“Umu. I also agree with the suggestion jya”

Taiyou was still thinking about such things, when the eldest of the girls Kohaku had already declared her agreement with Hera's suggestion.

"You've got to be kidding me, right?" Taiyou was looking at her in this kind of manner.

"Isn't there a saying of, 'A man needs to aim to become the head of the household'? Back in the day, it had the meaning of becoming the feudal lord of a castle and whatnot, but these days, it has a more comely meaning of..... Owning your own cozy home. If we base it on the more recent meaning, I think that this name will really suit the building jyaro"

"Nono, this is the place that you own"

Kohaku was staring at him as if asking "What are you talking about?"

Whilst Kohaku was speaking as if this was already Taiyou's mansion, in actuality the owner of this building was Kohaku and it didn't have any relation to Taiyou. If he was forced to clarify his position it was to the extent that he had only stayed in this building for one night, and in terms of owning rights to the house he definitely did not own such a right. And yet, Kohaku was looking at him as if what he said didn't make any sense.

"Umu? If you are worried about the ownership rights of the land, I don't mind it if I present it all to you, if you'd like?"

"Aren't you using the wrong vocab here? What do you mean 'present' it?"

"No, I didn't use the wrong words nojya"

Kohaku happily said so.

"Even if I look like this, I'm quite the old fashioned woman"

"Rather than saying you are old fashioned, isn't your age—"

Just now he realized what he was about to say to Kohaku and he stopped his own sentence mid-way. He knew it was something he shouldn't say—Even in normal human society it was something that you shouldn't touch, or so people would say that this was a taboo topic to talk about with girls. Naturally, the criticism he was about to

receive would also be boisterous.

“Taiyou-san!”

“You can’t talk about a girls age like that!”

“It’s the most basic of manners!”

The three sisters who had only showed goodwill towards Taiyou up until now suddenly spoke up for Kohaku.

“Ah, Ahh. I’m sorry Kohaku-san, I was just—”

Taiyou faced towards Kohaku and bowed his head in apology. Although it was true that he was being scolded by the three sisters, when he thought about it properly even more so than the average person, talking to Kohaku about her age is probably an even bigger taboo.

They were existences who stopped aging after the age of 10 branded as the eternally little. They were destined not to have a companion for their whole life and were also known as the leftover old maids. To someone like her Taiyou felt that it was very insensitive to talk about their age.

Therefore, Taiyou was bowing down his head, however the person in question didn’t seem to be bothered by it in the slightest.

“Oh, don’t mind it. I already know that it’s a fact that I am already an old lady jyakara”

Hearing her say such a thing, everyone in the room became silent. When someone self-depreciates themselves a little too far it can create this kind of atmosphere, it was that kind of awkward silence they were in. Noticing the awkward atmosphere... Kohaku spoke with an even more mischievous smile on her face.

“Considering the average lifespan of the eternally little I still have approximately 40 years left to live, that’s about 1/3 of my life remaining jyana”

“Isn’t that actually a really long time?!”

Taiyou spurted the words out without thinking. This was a surprising discovery for



Taiyou.

“Umm... If there is 40 years left to live this means...”

“Then it means that you will be able to live to around 120 years old?!”

“Or more like, is that really the average life span of the eternally little?”

Just like Taiyou the three sisters were bewildered and each of them was asking Kohaku questions, this was a naturally thing.

I mean if she said that the oldest known eternally little has lived up to the age of 120 then the reactions would at most be “Wow that’s so amazing” but, she actually said that the average lifespan is at least 120, meaning that there is a quite a good chance she may live beyond 120 years, this was something that you couldn’t help but be surprised about. Kohaku seemed to be pleased at their reactions and she started to explain in more detail.

“Umu, the average lifespan of the eternally little girls is about 120 years old, and this figure doesn’t really fluctuate too much. It’s about 1/5th longer than the usual woman”

“Is that so?” Taiyou muttered.

“This is quite a famous fact you know? If you don’t believe me in this matter, you can just look it up on the net”

After hearing her words, Taiyou decided to himself that when he had the time, he would look up the term “eternally little” and learn more about them. If he thought about it, the problems he faced this time was actually quite related to the eternally little and yet he didn’t even know much about them. Although he knew the basic details that they would not age past the age of 10, he didn’t know the more intricate details like their lifespan, or any special body conditions they may have.

Not growing old has a similar meaning to not growing senile. Going by this speculation, it made sense that they could really only die from either severely physical injury or sickness.

Well even amongst normal humans who aren’t the eternally little, there are also those rare ones that never meet any misfortunate accidents and die from sickness instead.

If it was true that the eternally little would not age a day past 10 years old then, shouldn't they be able to live several hundreds of years, as long as they didn't get sick or get into an accident? "In that case, shouldn't their life expectancy increase even more?" This is what Taiyou thought.

If she says the average life span is 120 years of age, there must be something else that he didn't know about... Well he would investigate this matter sooner or later and find out...

"Let's return to the conversation. Like I was saying, I am an old woman..... and it is my old fashioned belief that the power of the family should lie with the patriarch of the family"

"I understand what you are getting at but, the when you say family head..... you can't mean..."

"It's you jya"

When Kohaku declares this fact, Hera and even the three sisters all raised their voices in agreement.

"It is a naturally thing nanodesu~"

"Yes, Taiyou-san is the pillar of our group"

"Or is it better to call him, our Master?"

"If we are naming the building a castle, I think it might be more appropriate to call him "King", don't you guys think?"

The women who were speaking unanimously were all very high spirited.

Taiyou felt like a headache was coming to him.

He was called their Pillar, Master and King.

The titles was changing at a rapid pace to become higher and higher, and sooner or later he thought they might go crazy and start worshipping him as a god or something?!

He thought he needed to do something to stop the madness, but he was helpless.

Taiyou glanced at the three sisters.

Well at the very least he did agree that he had to become the central pillar of the group..... and someone worthy of being the family head of the household. And just like that, Taiyou gave up trying to convince them to stop their hype.

“Well it’s been decided jya, as you can see the it’s a majority agreement and from today forth you shall be the king of this household jya”

“I’m not sure whether we will be following a royal doctrine, or if this will be a democracy though...”

Taiyou forced a bitter sweet smile for an instant before he turned serious and looked straight at Kohaku.

“I will gratefully accept your hospitality to stay here, however, I will by no means accept the ownership of the house”

When he said this so sternly, Kohaku was surprised and she had a regrettable expression on her face.

“What is it? Do you not like power when it’s given to you by a woman? In this world there are plenty of success stories where the section chief of a company suddenly gets promoted to become the chairman of a big enterprise, I don’t think this is something you need to worry about jyazo”

“Like I said, why do you always like to joke around like this so much?!”

After giving her his usual retort, Taiyou changed his face to a more serious expression again. For a while the two people just stared at each other. It was like the air around them froze after a long period of silence. At this point in time, Hera butted into the middle of their conversation with her usual thoughtless words.

“Mou, Taiyou-chan is such a block head desu～ a big oaf nanodesu～”

“Um? Why are you saying that?”



“Don’t you understand desuka?”

Hera silently shook her head as she answered. Immediately after that, a very surprising thing occurred for Taiyou. The one who was coming to reproach him wasn’t just Hera. That’s because the three sisters standing next to Hera also agreed with her.

The three sisters had bitter smiles on their faces as if asking him “Why don’t you understand?” it was the kind of look a teacher from an elementary school would give to a child doing a bad thing. Seeing their reactions, Taiyou started to think “Was I the one in the wrong?”.

He asked the girls with a questioning tone.

“Can you guys explain to me what’s going on? Why am I a blockhead or an oaf?”

“Hahh, Taiyou-chan were you born from the groin of a tree or a stone? Or are you imported goods from India desuka?～”

Hera shrug her shoulders and let loose a sigh as if saying, “deary me, what a clueless child”. And as expected the three sisters were also looking at him with similar expressions. Taiyou was getting flustered as he didn’t know what the heck was going on. Hera flew close towards him and Peshito! Slapped him in the forehead as if scolding a student that just doesn’t learn.

“Kohaku-tan, wants to give Taiyou-chan her everything desuyo～”

“Eh?”

“How should I put it, let me rephrase it desu～”

Hera cleared her throat and started to talk from the beginning again.

“She wants to dedicate her everything desuyo～”

Dedicate her everything?!

That was no longer just talking in between the lines or beating around the bush, this was a Japanese word that could only be interpreted according to the meaning of the word.

Taiyou was completely shocked as he turned around to face Kohaku. Normally she was rational, a lolibaba who always behaved coolly and with grace. However, this time around, the moment he laid his eyes on her, her cheeks began to blush as she looked down shyly.



**I BECAME A LIVING CHEAT**

[LIGHTNOVELSTRANSLATIONS.COM](http://LIGHTNOVELSTRANSLATIONS.COM)



## CHAPTER 49

# A HAREM THAT DOESN'T ALLOW ME TO VOICE OUT MY OPINIONS

---

“You will dedicate..... Your everything?”

Taiyou froze as he muttered out these words. He was 16 years old, and a young boy who was currently in the midst of his puberty. You could say that Taiyou was more mature than the average person in his age group, however, it was not like he was at the level of an enlightened Buddhist monk that could expel all desires.

When a girl says something like “dedicate her everything” as a young pubescent male, he could not help but think of the sexual connotation the words had. In his mind right now, he was fantasizing about Kohaku saying the exact same words, except, she was completely naked and blushing in a cute pose.

“Is that..... so?”

“That is so nanodesu～”

“You be quiet for once!”

When Taiyou tried to tell Hera to stay out of it, the three sisters started to corner him from the side.

“Taiyou-san I also think that..... I agree with Hera”

“I think that what Hera-chan is saying makes sense”

“After all, I completely understand how Kohaku-san feels”

The girls were saying this as they glanced towards Kohaku.

“-tsu”

Taiyou also turned to look at Kohaku. The moment he did, it was like a hammer hit his

heart. Kohaku who was in front of his eyes, was blushing cutely. She looked just like a girl in love. Taiyou was being told off by not only Hera but also the Three sisters. All of them were speaking as if their way of thinking was the only correct one.

Taiyou winced. Even now Kohaku's expression was one that was about to begin weeping at any moment.

"Am I a bother?"

"That's not it!"

Taiyou firmly denied it. Because he suddenly spoke with such a large voice, Kohaku was so surprised that she jumped up. She settled down after a while and she timidly asked Taiyou.

"Is that the... truth?"

The one standing before him right now was not a senior who was experienced in life. It was a lonesome girl who until now had been constantly wounded and was mustering up her last bit of courage to ask if he could accept her. Right now that was the kind of girl Taiyou was seeing in front of him. His feelings began to sprout. The feeling that she was just so precious. Taiyou truly felt that the girl known as Azumaya Kohaku was just so adorable right now. He took a deep breath and after arranging the feelings within his chest, he tried to convey it in his words.

"Yes, it is true. To be frank..... I was completely caught off guard when you told me that you would dedicate everything. However, hearing you say something like this..... Makes me really happy"

When he said this, Kohaku burst into tears. Her being this happy with just hearing his words..... made him feel that she had truly been so deprived. Therefore, he wanted to answer her feelings even more, not just using his words.

However, there was one thing that worried him. In this country, it was the norm that the relationship between a man and a woman was mutually exclusive and that it was a first-come-first served basis.

—Order of arrival.

Thus Taiyou turned around to face the three sisters.

“You guys—”

Before Taiyou was even able to finish his sentence, and without the need to glance at each other, the three sisters promptly answered.

“A little while ago, I think that we have already mentioned this to Taiyou-san”

“Our dream is to make a harem with the person that we fall in love with”

“We know what Taiyou-san is worried about, however, we are on Kohaku-san’s side on this matter”

After hearing this, Taiyou did remember that he was told something like this a little while ago. He certainly did have this told to him, but at that particular time, he thought that they were just playing a practical joke on him or something. He thought that during that time perhaps the girls said it in the heat of the moment..... He did think that humans were impulsive creatures that could sometimes spout ridiculous things.

And at that particular time, he was also a little dazed at the circumstances and he could only partly understand what they were saying. However, right now, the girls clearly repeated the same words again.

Perhaps they really do mean it.....? he started to think. Perhaps they read his thoughts from the expression he had on his face, but the girls had a soft smile on their faces as they continued even further.

“The three of us has always planned on falling in love with the same person, getting married and then creating a family together. However, up until now, far from anyone accepting this part of us, many people would have a strange look on their faces just from hearing us mention it”

“For someone like us, Taiyou-san is the first person to ever accept us. Even for people like us, Taiyou-san told us that he loved us. We were extremely happy to hear that, so glad, and even now we feel blessed”

“Even weird people like us..... Could still be loved”



The three girls spoke in a chorus.

““““We want Kohaku-san to be able to share this feeling as well!”“““

The girls were saying this with extremely earnest expressions. They were seriously asking him..... No, the faces they had looked like they were begging him to listen. They themselves were really happy, and they wanted to share this happiness with others as well. Up until now, Taiyou had never been so shocked. The three sisters who were able to go that far, Taiyou didn't believe that people like them existed.

“You girls.....”

Taiyou expanded his arms and embraced the three people.

““““Taiyou-san.....”“““

They wanted to share their happiness. Their strong words were embedded deeply in Taiyou's mind..... and his heart was moved. They were unbearably dear to him. If he was able to make them happy, he felt like he would do anything. Even if the actions he took would make people gossip about him behind his back. Taiyou released them from his embrace, and after giving each of them a kiss on their forehead, he turned towards Kohaku.

“Kohaku-san”

He goes in front of her, and kneels down so that he matches her line of vision.

“Let me confirm just one thing. Are you sure that you are fine with me? As you can see, within my arms, I already have these three girls. And no matter what happens from now on, they will never separate from me. In addition, I cannot swear that I will love you equally as I love them”

He looked straight into her eyes. She also looked straight into his eyes.

“After hearing all this. Do you think that you will be fine with someone like me?”

“It is possible to love equally. I wouldn't believe in a man who could say such sugar coated words”

Kohaku immediately replied. Even now she was answering his question in such a roundabout way, it was so like her.

“People have a natural tendency to have favourites *nojya*. No, even if one had a favorite, their opinions could change as the days go by. Someone capable of loving impartially is theoretically an impossible thing. Therefore, I won’t trust a man who is able to say such a thing nonchalantly”

Saying this, she took Taiyou’s hand. It was cold and small... yet it was shockingly soft.

“Just from the fact that you are..... Able to say this to me with honesty, I am already willing to follow you for the rest of my life” (*Kohaku*)

Her words..... no her sense of values were similar to the three sisters and to himself, so he could understand her words clearly. The general populous would normally reject the notion of a “harem” immediately criticizing the fact that there would be an “uneven” amount of love between the parties, even now Taiyou could not understand why people thought like this.

He could not understand it, but what was important was that he could understand clearly what the girls were trying to convey to him. And also what he should do from now on. He had no confidence in being able to love them all equally, however, what he had confidence in doing was that he could love them all for the rest of his life.

As long as they still loved him and was willing to accept him, he was willing to return those feelings. Taiyou thought about it like that. And he strongly, strongly believed he could make it work.

“I understand”

Taiyou nods, and puts a bit of strength into his hands as Kohaku’s small body was drawn into his arms. She was embraced closely, her small chin was resting against his shoulders and it was like he wrapped around her completely.

“Please, stay by my side for a long time to come”

“I swear it. Until..... Death do us apart”

As expected her answer was immediate. Having embraced Kohaku, although he

couldn't see the faces of the three sisters, he was sure that they were smiling. Taiyou was convinced that was the case. Because their sweet atmosphere was definitely transmitted to the three sisters.

After embracing each other for quite a while, the two people separated. Taiyou was just a little surprised. This was because Kohaku's expression became a lot softer. Her eyes which usually held the look of someone who was beyond their years. Had now changed into a considerably softer look

That was truly—.

Just as he was thinking about this, as per usual Hera butted in with a happy tone of voice.

“Panpakapann, Congratulations desu～. Taiyou-chan has obtain his second wife nanodesu”

“The second? “

For a moment, he thought about how Hera truly couldn't read the mood, but soon enough her words caught his interest. What did she mean by the second person?

“Yes, the second person desuyo～”

Hera just repeated the same words. To his surprised the other women backed up Hera's statement.

“Umu, I also think that I am the second. What, who else in here would be fit for such a position?”

“Is there someone else fit for the position Taiyou-san?”

“Ah, don't tell me, that white girl?”

“That's probably true, if she was here, Kohaku-san would probably become the third wife “

“Fumu, there is still meaning in being the third, even if that was the case I wouldn't mind it”

The females were interacting with each other. At this point, Taiyou had also realized that the three sisters counted themselves as one person. Looking at it like this, it was obvious that the three sisters were the first wife and Kohaku would be the second wife.

The Three sisters were the first and Kohaku was the second, these four girls were speaking to each other quite intimately as they chatted. It looked as if they had already known each other for many years. They were so close with each other that, Taiyou who was the only man here could not even butt into their conversation.

Butting into the conversation of these girls was impossible even for someone as strong as Hercules. He suddenly remembered that he used to see this kind of spectacle all the time in school. Normally seeing this kind of scene he would feel a sense of incompatibility and slight discomfort.

However right now it was totally different, even though he could not join in their conversation, to him this scene didn't bother him in the slightest, in fact he felt tranquil at the scene.

It was the feeling of relief, having known that the women he loved were happily getting along with each other. The more that they were able to get along with each other, the happier Taiyou felt. And just as he thought that he could indefinitely watch this moment, Hera obstructed him again.

"Taiyou-chan, Taiyou-chan"

"What is it?"

"Taiyou-chan, you need to level up to level 10 quickly desuyo～"

What was she saying all of a sudden? Taiyou looked at Hera in puzzlement.



## CHAPTER 50

### IT'S NO USE CRYING OVER SPILT MILK

---

In the end the building was called “Taiyou’s Castle” and right now Taiyou was standing in front of the room at the very back of the second floor.

Hera was pushing him onwards in order to obtain level 10..... at first he wondered why she rushed him so much. This is because he had completely forgotten the fact that at level 10 he would obtain something important. That is, at level 10 he would acquire a second skill.

“Is she in here?”

He was standing in front of the door and Kohaku nodded her head to his question. “so she’s inside here?”..... Taiyou took a deep breath, turned the knob and stepped inside the room.

This room was devoid of any furniture, it was a completely empty room except for the fact that there was one woman inside. The girl had her hands tied behind her back and a gag on her mouth, so that she could not run away, her hands were tied to the corner of the room.

Although her clothes were not disordered, her hair had become frayed and her eyes had dark circles underneath them. If the police was to discover her in this state, there was no doubt that Taiyou would be charged with abduction and confinement and without a doubt he would be arrested. Juniishima Sakura. She watched Taiyou with cold eyes as he entered the room.

“Uhh, first of all I would like to apologize”

When he saw how she looked at him, Taiyou flinched and instinctively apologized to her. Having her restrained was one thing, but completely leaving her stranded for such a long period of time was his bad. Whilst apologizing, Taiyou approaches her. He had noticed her presence since yesterday, but things seem to crop up one after another and he forgot about her in the end.

If Taiyou were to postpone this issue any longer and start to level up, things may turn out quite badly. Thinking about it like this, Taiyou decided to give priority to liberating Sakura.

“It should be enough now, right?”

Taiyou turned towards Kohaku in order to confirm whether it was alright, and he started to unfasten the bindings on Sakura. Although it was already decided that Kohaku would become a part of his harem, she was still talking in her overly polite manner.

“Fumu, there are no problems. I already received the report that things have already been set in motion”

Kohaku didn't say “who” she got the report from though. Yurikago was trying to hide her existence, and even more so in front of Sakura, Kohaku was careful not to reveal any important details.

“I understand”

Taiyou nods, he understood what Kohaku was saying and why she was talking in such a roundabout way. “If that was the case, it should be fine to release Sakura”, whilst thinking this he was about to release the rest of her bindings, however...

Kohaku approaches him and his hands were quietly gripped.

“Wait, I don't mind it if you want to release her, however, there is one important thing that must be done”

“Something that must be done?”

Taiyou knits his eyebrows thinking that perhaps he may have overlooked something important and tilts his head in a questioning manner.

“Umu, it about a simple courtesy, the beauty in taking the correct procedure”

“Huh?”

“When you come into a house its polite manners to arrange your shoes neatly, or when

watching a thriller, it is necessary to expose who the real killer is or the viewers will be unsatisfied. It's something similar to that, therefore, when there is such a beautiful girl restrained right in front of you it would be such a shame not to do anything to her nojya. As you can see, she falls under the category of being a beautiful person, in that case, you should take the role of the perverted old man and do something that will make her say "J-just kill me already!" and——"

"Teeei!!!!!"

Before Kohaku could finish her sentence, Taiyou had already pulled the rope and tore it off. The rope was much thicker than a human's fingers, however for someone like Taiyou who had an incredible amount of power, it was like he was pulling on a silk thread. He completely ignored Kohaku's prank and liberated Sakura.

"What, how wasteful nou"

Kohaku was speaking as if she truly regretted it from the bottom of her heart.

"It's not a waste.....! And here I was thinking it was something important!"

"What, if you are thinking of creating a harem, shouldn't there be a character that fits the role of the slave? Nou?"

Whilst saying so, Kohaku turns towards Hera.

"Yes desu~ It's a standard thing nanodesu~. Even in the ero ero movies, it is best to take straight forward approach nanodesu~"

"You stay out of this! Don't take out such a ridiculous precedent as your supporting case!"

As he said this, he gave Hera a smack. Even though they haven't known each other for a long period of time, it could already be said that the relationship between Hera and Kohaku had reached the level of a golden combination.

On the one hand, Hera was a level up fairy, and on the other hand Kohaku was part of the eternally little and was a lolibaba. These two really hit off as they shared the same hobbies and interests. In other words, the amount of trouble Taiyou had to

handle had doubled. “Hopefully the amount of trouble won’t increase any more, right?” As Taiyou was thinking such things, he started to talk to Sakura who was rubbing her wrists.

“Allow me to apologize once again..... For being so late. Are you alright?”

“Yes... My body is fine”

Sakura was speaking sarcastically. Just from that single exchange, Taiyou remembered a nostalgic feeling. He had just met her yesterday and he only talked to her for a little while, but talking to her like this..... somehow made him miss the witty conversations he had with her.

“Is that so? In that case there should be no problems whatsoever”

“Ara? Is that the kind of words you should be saying to a woman you’ve restrained for more than half a day? I told you that my body was fine, but what if I told you that you have scarred my heart from ever healing?”

“For someone like you, that shouldn’t be the case right? I don’t think that you are the kind of fragile woman to be hurt by something like this”

“Ara, You’re such an awful person”

Sakura was elegantly covering her mouth as she chuckled but her eyes weren’t smiling.

“But you’ve seen right through me. Yes, that’s right, my mind is rumored to be as tough as cotton ball”

“As expected from you, that’s the kind of mindset of one who will rule the country sooner or later”

“Yes, because you’ve been such a gentleman, even my body hasn’t received much damage. Thanks to you, I can still rule the country as a woman who has not yet been defiled”

“I’m not really a gentleman, this code of conduct is a natural thing”



“Is that so? Allow me to give you a piece of friendly advice as a captured prisoner, there are plenty of women who will only be satisfied if they are treated like a lady”

“What kind of warning is this?”, as he thought about it, he asked her back.

“Are you also like that?”

“No, after all I am like a beast”

“I see, So you are saying that you take the initiative in relationships? Yeah, I guess I can see you in that kind of light” *(TL Note: Taiyou is actually calling Sakura a “carnivorous woman” which cannot be explained in a mere sentence, this word actually means: She is aggressive, calls the shots in love, is independent and opinionated)*

“Yes, that’s right. When all is said and done..... it would seem that you are a herbivorous man? The three sisters and the eternally little, they are all girls who would normally be out of the reach of normal men, and yet you have all four of them under your arms” *(TL note: “herbivorous man” is the antonym word for “carnivorous woman”, Sakura is basically saying that Taiyou is: unlike the traditional male stereotypes as he does not seem overly interested in the pursuit of money and sex, instead he values lies more in being, kind, co-operative and family oriented.)*

“I am also here you know ~”

Hera was complaining to Sakura, but neither her voice or her figure could be seen by her. This is where the conversation lulled. Taiyou and Sakura just stared at each other for some time, and a quiet atmosphere flowed between them. It was a strange atmosphere.

These two were not friends, neither were they lovers, and they didn’t have a relationship of being comrades either or anything close to it. On the contrary, they should have a hostile relationship with each other. Even so, there wasn’t a dangerous or threatening atmosphere between them. At least, Taiyou did not look at her in such a negative light. It was not like he wanted to make her his girlfriend, or to the extent that he wanted her in his harem, but it was more like he wanted to get to know her a little better.

“What kind of relationship was this?” even Taiyou himself did not know the answer to

that question. Whilst he was in contemplation, Sakura abruptly interrupted his thoughts.

“Well then, it’s about time that I make my way back”

“Are you going back just like that? Are you sure that you don’t need to leave any threatening remarks against me?”

“It’s already come to this”

Sakura let out a deep breathe as she sneered.

“This eternally little girl already told you right? The snow has already begun to roll”

“Fumu, it can also mean that there is no use crying over spilt milk”

Kohaku joined in on their conversation, and for once the things she said actually made sense. “It would be really good if she always talked like this... at least it was much better than the suggestive jokes she came up with”, Taiyou much preferred to talk to her in this kind of manner.

“In that case, there is no meaning to it even if I used a threat. If it isn’t possible to fix, than there is only one option left, and that is to draw up a new plan”

“A new plan...? That sounds just like what you would do”

“That is quite so. Rather than thinking that there is only one water we can share, I would much prefer to think that water is what we need. I mean, wouldn’t you agree that this kind of logic is more reasonable?”

“Kukuku, well isn’t that good”

Kohaku was stifling her laughter as she looked towards the three sisters. Perhaps they were bad with this kind of conversation, the three sisters Kotone, Suzune and Kazane all had expressions of bafflement. They had the same exact face with the same exact expression. It would seem that they could not follow the roundabout way of communication. For the time being he left them like that and concentrated on the conversation with Sakura.

“In that case, I hope that I won’t become the water that blocks your path”

“Ara, you are saying such a thing even though you don’t really believe in your own words”

“I’m being serious”

Taiyou said this as he looked straight at Sakura.

“I do enjoy the conversations we have, and as such I wouldn’t mind conversing more often. If it is possible, I don’t want to talk to you as an enemy, but meet you as an ally where we can have a good long chat”

Sakura silently nods as she begins to walk towards the entrance of the room. Taiyou himself had moved out of the way so that she could pass through, and as such, the three sisters, Kohaku and even Hera made way to let Sakura pass.

She was standing at the doorway but she didn’t leave just yet. As she was gripping the door knob with her hands, she froze in that posture as if she thought of something to say.

“You said that you want to meet me again as an ally, is this correct?”

“Ahh, if it is possible”

“In that case, what do you think of forming a new path of water between us so that we can cooperate?”

With her back still turned towards him, Sakura asked him questioningly. “What did she mean by forming a new alliance and what did this entail?” just as Taiyou was thinking such things, she turned around and said...

“In the near future, I need to face my rival Juniishima Yurikago..... and I want your help in kidnapping her”

## CHAPTER 51

### THE FIRST TIME BEGINNING JOINT WORK PART 1

---

It was growing dark at the foot of the mountain.

There was a single vending machine placed in between the boundary of the town and the mountain. Part of the paint on the machine was starting to peel off and Taiyou was standing in front of the vending machine repeatedly inserting and then taking out his 100 yen coin.

A little off to the distance, Kohaku was watching over him.

After hearing about how he ran into trouble with the police the last time he tried to level up, Kohaku decided to accompany him. In this rural area, don't even mention the police officers, there was not even many people that passed by, Taiyou was diligently increasing his level.

And it was approximately one hour since he began his repetitive work that...

"Tereretetete〜♪ Taiyou-chan, you have levelled up!"

Hera who had seemingly vanished all this time, suddenly appeared and flew in front of him, she danced around in the air whilst singing her level up song. Kohaku who heard the announcement also approaches with a face full of smiles.

"Hou, she's dancing jyana"

"I am dancing desuyo〜. It's the level up dance nanodesu"

"Is that really necessary to do?"

"Wanna join in?"

"As if I'd do that?!"

Taiyou reflexively rejected her Hera's invitation. When he saw her dancing he didn't really think too much of it, but the moment she asked him to join her, he couldn't help



but give her a retort. Well since there wasn't too much point in reprimanding her too much about this matter, Taiyou just wanted to get on with it and move on to more important matters.

"Well then, Allow me to r-e-c-a-p~ ..... Taiyou-chan is now level 8 nanodesu~"

"Fumu, now that you've levelled up, do you feel anything different?"

"Yes desu! I will show it now!"

As soon as Hera said this, Taiyou received a familiar sensation, it was a rush of numerical figures going to his brain. It starts with the level rising in value, and then it moves on to give a comparison of the amount of status gained this level from the previous level.

Because he was quite familiar with the process, he was able to understand the numbers that popped into his brain. Kohaku who was next to him, spoke out loudly.

"Fumu..... This is really mysterious, it is such a queer sensation jyana"

"Eh? Are you seeing this?"

Taiyou was surprised as he turned to face Kohaku.

"Umu, it feels like the numbers are flowing from the bottom of my eyeballs all the way to the molars of my teeth. Are you also seeing it in the same way as me??"

"Where exactly are you saying it goes?! Well I kinda get what you are saying though"

"It's a secret of the human body desune~"

Hera spoke thoughtlessly. Taiyou thought that it was definitely nothing to do with the secrets of the human body but more about the secrets of the world. Whilst thinking such things, he perused his status and roughly understood the situation.

Although normally he would examine it more thoroughly, he didn't do this right now. That's because level 8 wasn't a huge checkpoint in terms of levelling. He faced towards Hera and said.

“So, what do we have to do next? You told me that I should hurry up and reach level 10 right?”

“Yes desu~, the moment you reach level 10, Taiyou-chan will receive a huge burst of power desu~”

“In that case, please tell me what the next step is”

He wanted to know the process of levelling up to level 9.

“Yes nanodesu~. By the way, Taiyou-chan, do you have a smart phone on you?”

“I do have it with me, but it’s broken you know?”

His smart phone was broken since the day he met Hera. For quite some time now, he has lived his life without using his smart phone, but so far it hasn’t really caused him too many problems. “Well it’s probably because I’ve been living such an unusual life” This is what Taiyou thought.

“That is a problem desu, the next step requires the use of a smart phone, otherwise it won’t do nanodesu~”

“If it’s alright to use another person’s smart phone, I don’t mind lending you mine dazo”

“That is fine nanodesu~”

After Hera answers, Kohaku pulls out her smart phone and hands it over to Taiyou. It was a smaller device than what Taiyou was used to using.

“You use a really small one don’t you?”

“That’s because the eternally little don’t have any long sightedness”

Kohaku twists her mouth into a grin. Taiyou smiled back at her whilst turning towards Hera.

“So, what do I have to do with this?”

“Ehh let me see desune, please start playing any game. And create a character and then—”

“I already know, I bet you are going to say create a character, and then delete that character and rinse and repeat, right?”

“That is correct nanodesu, as expected of Taiyou-chan nanodesu～”

Taiyou lets out a bitter smile. Considering what he had to do so far, it was easy to predict what he needed to do this time just from past experiences.

Taiyou used the smart phone and began to download a game he used to play back in the day. When he finished downloading the game, he started to do what Hera mentioned, which is to repeatedly create a character and then delete that character.

“Fumu, you are doing a reset marathon aren’t you?” *(TL note: people may do a reset marathon in games to abuse the advantages of creating a level one character and then taking the given rare item to transfer it to the newer character)*

“How come you are always so knowledgeable in these kind of matters?”

“As a lolibaba, knowing this kind of thing is a natural custom jyazo”

“I guess you aren’t like a certain someone, who doesn’t seem to know anything “

With a bitter smile, Taiyou continues his tedious work.

He creates a character, determining his status and then deleting the character.

He creates a character, determining his status and then deleting the character.

Suddenly, Taiyou remembered the days when he used to play the game. This particular game decided the starting status points randomly. The average status point you would get is about 50, however if you continuously rolled the dice, you would be able to start the game with an advantage.

At that time, Taiyou would relentlessly reroll his status points until he got the perfect figure, but right now his purpose in playing this game was to level up in real life, nevertheless he was seemingly able to make plenty of characters that exceeded the

average value by far.

Naturally, he would delete all these characters. This is obviously because his purpose was to level up in real life, not in the game. The sun had set completely, and the vicinity became dark.

The three people moved under a street lamp that was some distance away. Suddenly, Kohaku who was looking at the phone screen together with him raised her voice. The bonus point displayed in the screen actually reached 99, which was the absolute highest value.

“Ohh, isn’t that a really good figure? It’s the kind of figure that would allow you to make a slave harem–”

“Like I said, Please restrain yourself with making those kind of jokes!”

He immediately countered her joke which was approaching dangerous waters, and he completely erased the character.

“What a shame nou”

“It’s fine, after all this game is just a stepping stone for me to level up in real life”

“Well, I suppose that is true jyana”

Kohaku spoke with a tone of voice that seemed to drop towards the end.

“Hey, do you mind it if I ask you a serious question?” *(Kohaku)*

“What is it?”

Taiyou was continuing to work as he asked her what was up.

“The thing that Juniishima Sakura talked about... Are you truly going to undertake it?”

“If you are talking about kidnapping Yurikago? Then yeah, I’m planning on accepting her offer”

“Is that really alright? Doesn’t this mean that you will make that girl into your enemy?”



Kohaku was asking him with an earnest expression. “Wasn’t she someone you’ve fought with in the past?”..... Kohaku’s question had that kind of implication to it.

“It should be fine. Or more like. It’s better if I was the one who did the kidnapping. I don’t really know what Sakura intends to do with her after she has kidnapped Yurikago, but if I am there, I can at least protect her when push comes to shove”

“I see, is that why you are doing this”

“Taiyou-chan, are you planning on putting Yurikago-chan into your harem desuka~? Are you going to make her your third wife nanodesu?”

“That’s not it. Think about it, if I know that she is about to be kidnapped I can’t really just ignore it, right?”

“Fumu, that is true jyana”

“Rather than completely disregarding the fact it will happen, being the one to kidnap her will bring a more favorable outcome. Thankfully, Sakura-san doesn’t know that I have a connection with Yurikago, so we will be using this to our advantage”

After saying this Taiyou removed his eyes from the screen, and for once he stretched out his limbs and neck.

“Umu, in regards to this matter, it all started with you trying to help the three sisters. And it was only later that you accepted to work together with Yurikago”

“She also hid her face from Sakura-san”

“That’s true. Well, even if Sakura did see her face by chance, it shouldn’t be too much of a problem, in any case, no one would ever suspect that a mere schoolboy is connected to the princess of the Juniishima Clan jyana”

“Yeah, I am also planning to use that fact. Well, if we are able to capture her successfully and secure the safety of her body, then it will be the best outcome”

“You might be in danger if you choose to do this jyazo?”

“Rather than pretending not to see anything and feeling the immense guilt that comes

with it, this is a much better alternative”

“Is that so?”

Kohaku nods and the conversation is cut short at this point. Taiyou continued to work under the veil of darkness pressing buttons on his smart phone whilst the two women continued to watch over him. This kind of scene continued for quite some time. Until—

“Tereretetete～♪ Taiyou-chan, you levelled up! You have now reached level 9 nanodesu～”

“Have I increased in level already? This time around it was also really fast wasn’t it?”

In that way, both he and Kohaku confirmed the rise in his abilities.

“As usual, the thing that seems to increase the most is my strength”

“I suppose you are just that kind of character jyaro. Oh yeah, maybe it will be good if I bring you a wooden mallet from the jungle?”

“Please stop right there”

Taiyou replied to Kohaku with a wry smile but he still imagined the scene of himself wielding the wooden hammer. “That may not be such a bad thing” he thought.

“Well, what’s next? It seems that we are about to hit level 10, what do I need to do this time?”

“Is it perhaps putting dandelions on sashimi and then removing it one by one?”

Kohaku suddenly intervenes from the side as she tried to predict the next set of work Taiyou needed to do. At any rate, it was the norm by now that increasing his level had something to do with doing useless work. Even if the first half of the work had some sort of meaning, the second part of the work usually nullified any benefit from the first action. Taiyou thought that the next thing he needed to do was surely going to follow the same sort of principle.

“We might do that a little further down the line nanodesuyo～. However the next thing we have to do desune～ is the Princess Carry (*Himesama Dakko*) nanodesu～”

“Yes?”

The words that came out of Hera’s mouth was just something he would never have expected.

## CHAPTER 52

# THE FIRST TIME BEGINNING JOINT WORK PART 2

---

Taiyou was flabbergasted and doubted his own ears.

“Did you just say Princess Carry?”

“Yes! Ah, it’s also fine as long as you carry them with your arms, you know～? Even if you don’t bring them really really high up, it’s also fine desuyo～”

“I’ve never seen or heard of anyone doing that sort of princess carry to begin with! “

Whilst giving her a rebuke, he reflexively imagined what kind of scene that would be.

This would probably involve someone throwing the girl really high up in the air before catching them again in their embrace, it was truly a surreal kind of scene.

Well strictly speaking, if he were a normal human being, he probably wouldn’t even be able to imagine such a ridiculous thing like throwing the girl high into the air, but right now he was in the possession of a superhuman power, because he himself was likely able to accomplish such a feat he inadvertently imagined such a thing.

Although it was possible to do, it would be a foolish thing to try. Taiyou starts massaging the middle of his forehead as he tried to get rid of that scene from his mind. From his side, Kohaku speaks with a serious tone of voice.

“You mentioned the princess carry, but can you explain to me in detail exactly what must be done nojya?”

“.....Kohaku-san, why are your eye’s sparkling so much?”

“It’s natural jyarō! We are talking about the princess carry here! Or what, are you going to tell me that as an 87 year old lady, that I shouldn’t be thinking about things like being a princess and that it’s absurd?”

Kohaku was speaking passionately and with insistence. Since the first time I met her,

this is the most passionate she's ever been about something. It was way too strong, rather than backing off, it was like she was preparing for all-out war with her threatening attitude.

The young elderly woman standing there looked almost like a carnivorous animal as she spoke.

"N, no..... I have no intentions of doing such a thing"

Taiyou could only stumble as he spoke out the words.

"In that case, it's all good. Now then, you should teach him right now the way to properly perform it nojya"

Kohaku's breathing was becoming rougher as she quickly urged Hera to get on with the explanation. Kohaku was acting really differently from her usual calm self, nevertheless, the level up fairy merely responded with her happy go lucky tone of voice.

"Yes~ Well even so, it's a really simple thing desuyo, all you have to do is perform the princess carry, then let them off and then do it again desu~"

"As expected, it would turn out like this", Taiyou thought. Although for a moment the impact of the words 'princess carry' really shocked him, in the end the thing he had to do was more or less the same as before.

Just like he has done up until now, he just needed to repeat the same actions, even though it held no meaning he merely had to repeat them.

"I understand, that is clear and simple"

Kohaku nods, she looks in Taiyou's direction with a strong shining gaze.

"Well then, you should get on with it and do that right now nojya!"

"Umm... Why don't we move locations for now?"

"Why jya?!"



Kohaku's voice sounded almost like a scream.



Taiyou, Kohaku and Hera, the three people return to "Taiyou's Castle".

The three sisters who had been cleaning all this time, whilst he was out levelling was gathered in the living room terrace, and they were all explained about the matter of the princess carry. After he explained the circumstances, not only Kohaku but even the girls started to get fired up.

Although Kotone and the girls were able to keep their composure better than Kohaku, nevertheless, their blazing eyes sparkled as they spoke.

"Everyone has already been gathered, and the circumstance have been explained. Now then, this time we need to start the princess carry jya!"

"Do I really have to do this?"

Kohaku was pressing herself against him intently. Taiyou spoke to Hera in a tone that seemed like he wanted to be saved out of the situation.

"Yes, this is the only way to increase the experience gain desu. Taiyou-chan, don't tell me you actually don't want to do it desuka~?"

"Unnh"

"Eh....."

His brides were reacting to Hera's question.

"It's not like I find it unpleasant, but... How do I explain it...?"

"If you don't find it uncomfortable than hurry up and do it desu~"

"That's right, you should hurry up and do it already jya"

"Please take care of us, Taiyou-san"

All the women were lined up as they requested to be princess carried. And just when Taiyou steeled his resolve and thought “fine let’s do this then”, at that time...

“-Wait, Hey Hera?”

“Yes～?”

Taiyou suddenly remembered something, and Hera was waiting for his question as she tilted her head. The thing he remembered..... was something that occurred during the time he levelled up to level 5. At that particular time, his level went up when he kissed the three sisters. And this time around, he needed to perform the princess carry in order to increase his level.

From level 5 to Level 10. Taiyou started to think of the incremental connection between these acts.

“Can you please tell me the method to level, when I reach level 15, right now?”

The moment he asked her, Hera turned her eyes away at once.

“As expected, is that how this is?! What are you going to make me do?! Tell me right now!”

“It is not possible to say it with my mouth nodesu～”

“You are denying... Your own meaning to life right now, you Ero Fairy!”

“The things that can be done tomorrow don’t need to be discussed today desu～”

“Don’t try to say cool things, I won’t get fooled by it you know?!”

Although Taiyou pressed Hera for an answer, she kept evading a direct answer, she was as slippery as an eel. Level 5 consisted of a kiss, Level 10 is a princess carry.

Although the aspect of repeatedly doing a certain thing remained the same, the thing he had to do..... seemed to be five times more..... than what he had to do previously.

In such a case he was truly curious exactly, what he was going to have to do to reach level 15, but Hera just wouldn’t tell him the details.

“Why are you still arguing around, hurry up and do it nojya”

Kohaku was urging him onwards. When he looked at them, Kohaku and the three sisters all had bloodshot eyes. When he saw them like this, he exhaled a sigh and faced towards them.

“I will do it now, is that alright?”

“Oh!”

Kohaku responded cheerfully as I placed my hands around the back of her knees and lifted her in a princess carry. Her face was so near, and I could feel her breathing. When I looked at her from such a close distance, my heart started to throb. At that moment...

—Kiss.

Kohaku, pecked me with a short kiss.

“K, Kohaku-san”

Taiyou was surprised, as he didn’t expect that she would kiss him so suddenly. Kohaku who just kissed him started to blush her cheeks as she looked down. Just like that, she climbed down herself as she put both of her hands to cover her face.

She was really embarrassed, she was feeling really shy about what she had just done. Her shyness was contagious, as even Taiyou’s ears started to become really red all the way to the roots and his body started to feel hot.

His heart was beating and he continued to look at Kohaku. She looked extremely cute, she was really adorable. He wanted to hug her tightly, right this instant—

“Taiyou-san, don’t forget about us!”

“Let’s line up Ka-chan! I’ll be second, alright? “

“Yeah!”

The three sisters butted their way into the sweet atmosphere and lined up in front of Taiyou.

Kotone, Suzune and Kazane were lined in this order and looked towards Taiyou with expectant gazes. The sweet atmosphere remained without any change. Taiyou lifted the girls up one after another. He moved his hand to the back of their knees and gave them a princess carry.

Although they didn't give him a kiss, they were becoming more bashful.

It was a mysterious thing. These girls had already kissed him before, and they even declared that they wanted to make a harem together with him, and yet they were getting embarrassed by something like a princess carry..... Taiyou made a note within his own mind, as to just how formidable this thing called the princess carry can be.

Eventually, the princess carry had already gone to round two.

Before he knew it was already Kohaku's turn again and this time she twined her hands around his neck.

"Ahh....."

Kohaku was overcome with emotion. Her face was full of ecstasy as her body shivered. Looking at such an expression, Taiyou's heart skipped a beat.

"You need to do it to me too desu~. You must Taiyou-chan!"

Perhaps it was because she became jealous when seeing the other girls had faces of pure bliss so Hera also wanted to join in the fun as she boisterously shoved in line.

Seeing the fairy who could not sense the mood, he was slightly angry, so Taiyou used one of his hands to grab on to her whole body and raised it up like he was carrying a dumbbell.

"Wa, wait Taiyou-chan! That isn't the princess carry nanodesu! If you do it like that, you won't be able to get any experience desuyo~"

Hera was shouting about as she struggled about, and soon he proceeded to give Kotone her second hug. And when the second round of hugs had finally finished, the girls all slumped down to the floor.

"For there to be something so sweet to experience in this world... I think that I no

longer have any regrets in this world nojya”

“You can’t think like that Kohaku-san!”

“That’s right! You need to remember the things that Hera-chan and Taiyou-chan were talking about”

“When he needs to reach level 15, there will be something else that needs to happen”

The three sisters spoke in succession. Because the girls themselves experienced it when he was about to reach level 5, their words seemed more trustworthy to believe.

“Th, that’s right jyana..... Umu, there must be more things that are even better than this jyana. Even so, I think that this is my limit jya. My heart is beating so fast, I don’t think it can hold out. I think that I have to retire for this one, I shall leave the rest to everyone else nojya”

“How can that be! Kohaku-san...”

“We understand, please leave it up to us!”

“We will use up Kohaku’s portion and give Taiyou-san more hugs!”

“Hey guys, come on, it’s just a princess carry...”

Taiyou was butting into the conversation, but naturally, his voice was left unheard. Just like that, he started to hug the three sisters taking turns.

Kohaku who told the sisters that she was done for came beside his feet, and she was snuggling her body which barely had any energy left, against his legs. In his arms, he could feel the weight of the three sisters, and against his feet he could feel the warmth of Kohaku’s soft body.

It felt as if all his body’s sensations had gathered in those two places. The pleasant feeling of touching his body to theirs skin to skin. Gradually, he didn’t even care about the reason he was doing this anymore.

All he knew was that right now, he was really happy, and he wanted to be together like this for a long time.



# CHAPTER 53

## THE POWER OF A BRIDE AND THEIR IDOLIZED MASTER

---

No matter how happy you become, there is a moment in time when it comes to an end.

“Teretetetete ~♪ Taiyou-chan you levelled up!”

“.....”

After finally letting down Kazane, Kohaku who was still at his feet, was hoping that her turn would come next—however in that moment, a thoughtless little fairy interrupted this hope with her loud voice. The sweet atmosphere they had until now popped like soap bubbles, Taiyou turned to Hera with an indifferent look.

“What’s up desuka?”

“.....No, nothing’s wrong. More importantly, you told me that I levelled up right?”

“Yes! With this now Taiyou-chan has reached level 10. A • N • D, a new skill can be selected desu~”

Just like her usual self Hera was performing her level up dance as she spun around in the air.

“Last time around I had three choices to choose from, right?”

“Yes, there is always going to be three choices nanodesuyo~”

“I see..... Last time around there was super-armor and also a passive skill: experience value gain improvement, which one should I choose this time I wonder? Because they both seem really useful, I’m kind of conflicted”

“In that case, let’s get started~!”

“Ahh..... te Oi”

“Yes?”

Hera was tilting her head in the air. It was almost as if she became one of those mascots characters, that came into popularity in the recent years.

“You, wait a moment and just sit still”

Hera was doing just as she was told and she was kneeling on her knees whilst in mid-air.

“What is this about? There is nothing for me to choose from?”

“There is~ Please choose among these three options”

“Hou, this is such a classical joke. It’s the one that I used to see, back in the day”

Kohaku was just happily enjoying the banter that Taiyou and Hera was having. If Taiyou thought about it carefully..... he realized that Kohaku was quite the expert in these types of joke materials...

- Passive Skill Idol
- Passive Skill Idol
- Passive Skill Idol

The skills displayed before Taiyou, was three skill sets which seemed to be copy pasted right in front of him. Taiyou was just downright amazed, and Kohaku was having fun.

Although there was supposed to be three choices, isn’t she just contradicting her own statement if the three choices were the same?!

“What’s wrong Taiyou-chan? You should choose quickly desu”

“.....Is there an option for me not to choose any of these skills?”

“That’s also fine, but in return, you won’t be allowed to level up desuyo~”

“I don’t even have an option not to choose?!”

“Nevertheless..... The skill is Idol?”

“Kohaku-san, do you know..... What the “Idol” skill is?”

Kotone was asking Kohaku.

“There is a double meaning. There is a meaning of it being a religious thing, like a Buddhist Statue or a Cross jya. Moreover it has another meaning of being a personality idol”

“Buddhist statue.....”

“Personality Idol.....”

“I wonder which one it refers to?”

The questions the three sisters were asking, were precisely what Taiyou was wondering as well.

If all the three choices were the same, then it didn’t matter which he chose. It was more important to discern the meaning of the word itself.

The previous three choices were very easy for Taiyou to understand as it was game related. Even without saying it, when he saw long distance invalidity he could approximate what it meant, similarly with the other two skills, he could grasp the concept of what they might do.

However “Idol” was a very obscure term and he could not discern as to what it would do.

Taiyou thinks about this for a while before turning to Hera and asking.

“.....Let me just ask this to make sure but, it’s not a negative ability is it?”

“A negative thing?”

“I’m asking you if there is going to be some sort of a minus effect if I take this ability”

“If that’s what your worried about it’s alright desu, I swear it by my name~”

“I don’t really know how much value I can place on your name but..... Okay, in that case, I will choose “Idol” as my ability”

“Yes~”

Hera responds and does another twirl in mid-air. And, the area around them went silent for a moment.....

Within this silence, Taiyou was looking around the vicinity for anything amiss, and also at his own hands to see if anything was different. He wanted to make sure that something had occurred but he could not feel a single difference.

“So, What exactly happened?”

“Taiyou-chan, I’ll confirm your status for you~”

“Hou, I think it might be a skill that passively raises your abilities jyana”

As soon as Kohaku said this, everyone was startled and Taiyou’s ability was being confirmed by the girls.

To use the terms Kohaku to describe it, the feeling of information being sent into your brain was like it “was being sent between the back of the molars straight into your eyeballs”.

“It seems that your former abilities have increased haven’t they?”

“Ahh”

Taiyou nods. Everyone was seeing the same status screen of Taiyou’s. For instance, the power that Taiyou relied on the most which was his Strength had a value of “70(+17)” next to it. And this doesn’t stop at just his strength, even his other values had a plus attached to it.

“Although every ability had a bonus attached to it, the figures seem to be really random”

“Taiyou-san, this isn’t random, isn’t it going up by a percentage?”

“Look, at “Dexterity” and “Luck””

“These two abilities start with the same value, and the additional bonus points are also the same”

After hearing the three sister’s speculation, Taiyou was reconfirming their theory. And it was certainly the situation they described it to be.

“Umu, they all increased by around 25 percent jyana. But it seems that they are rounded down by half”

“So it’s 25%...”

“Yes~, because it’s for two people that’s why its 25 nanodesuyo~”

“For two? What do you mean?”

“You are pretty slow aren’t cha Taiyou-chan, it can only mean that Taiyou-chan has two people~”

“Huh.....?”

Taiyou was looking doubtful, he was racking his brains trying to figure out what she meant.

By chance, he looked towards Kohaku and the three sisters. At first they were also quite confused, as their eyebrows were puckered up and they were frowning, however, the girls managed to notice something before Taiyou was able to.

Immediately after, the three sisters were acting bashful, and the corners of Kohaku’s mouth was raised to a smile.

What was happening? Taiyou became even more confused at the situation.

“Don’t you understand yet ~? Mou, Taiyou is such a blockhead nanodesu~”

“This isn’t making any sense, right...? Eh? did you just call me a blockhead?”

After being retorted by Hera, Taiyou was taken aback.

“Blockhead” and “two people”... Moreover, the three sisters who realized something were acting all shy, and Kohaku was in a good mood.

After collating all this information, Taiyou came to a single conclusion.

Don't tell me..... just as Taiyou was thinking about this, Hera came in and told him the correct answer.

“It's exactly as you suspect desuyo~ Because Taiyou-chan's bride is two people, your abilities has risen by 25% to match the love of the two people. By the way, if you only had one bride then it will only be half the increase desu”

“.....What you are telling me is that, because Kotone, Suzune, and Kazane are here and also Kohaku-san. If the girls are by my side, I get a boost to my abilities?”

“That's not it, your abilities have increased because you are loved by them desuyo~”

“Love——”

Hearing such an immediate and direct explanation of the situation from Hera, Taiyou was profusely blushing.

Although he thought about the possibility of this in his own mind, thinking about it and it being pointed out brings about a different kind of embarrassment.

Seeing him blush in such a way, Kohaku who was on the side wore a content smile on her face.

“I understand now, is that why the ability is called “Idol””

“Does it mean Idolatry?” *(TL Note: Idolatry meaning is: extreme admiration, love, or reverence for something or someone)*

When Taiyou says this, Kohaku nods in response.

“That's right jyana, our belief—or our love for you is what makes you stronger nojya “

“Please! Don't say such a thing with such a straight face.....”

If there was a hole to crawl into, Taiyou would gladly do so right now.



“Yes~, The more brides Taiyou-chan has that loves him, the stronger he will become desu~”

Hera was speaking out thoughtlessly as per usual. Kotone who hears these words went “Ahh” as her voice leaked out.

He was about to ask her what was wrong, so he turned towards Kotone, but it wasn't just Kotone, even the two other sisters looked like they were feeling depressed.

“What's wrong?”

“Unn, umm... Us three altogether are only considered as one person...”

“Until now we've always thought that this was fine, but now..... We will only be able to help Taiyou-san as one person instead of three”

“If us three girls were not triplets and were separate people it would of been much better... Is what we are thinking”

“I understand, I am counted as a single person, whilst you three are counted as a single person..... I can see why you would feel anxious about this jyana”

Whilst saying this, Kohaku was signalling Taiyou to make a move. Taiyou nodded to Kohaku implying that he understood. He approaches the three girls who were feeling down, and all three of them were embraced.

“You guys don't have to worry. This kind of thing is only a bonus. In fact I feel that you three being counted as one person is a good thing. I think that you guys are ideal even if you are just one person”

“““Taiyou-san.....”““

The three sisters were clinging on to Taiyou with moistened eyes.

As he embraced the girls closely, Taiyou noticed that the value of his ability, ‘Harem’ actually had “65535(-16383)” wasn't this a negative value?!

## CHAPTER 54

# A BRIDES POWER/ A PERSON SHOULD KNOW THEIR OWN LIMITS

---

Noticing this figure, Taiyou was completely shocked. There was a 65535 and next to it in brackets a figure of -16383. At first if this was to appear next to the Harem stat he wouldn't know what it meant, but considering the effects of his new passive skill, he had a general idea of what it meant.

Although at first glance the figures don't make sense, but 16383 was actually 25% of 65535. He was able to know this at once. What he didn't understand was why, there was a negative sign next to this maxed out stat. He was thinking about such a thing whilst still hugging the three sisters. Getting curious about this he asked for Kohaku's opinion.

"What's wrong nojya? You are making a face that seems like a pigeon just got rejected by it's mate"

"What kind of a face is that...? No that's not my question. Right now, I saw a status that seems really off"

"A status that's really weird?"

Kohaku was just parroting his words. Taiyou hesitated whether or not to answer her back. In a certain sense, this particular status point, was one that he didn't really want the girls to find out about.

I mean after all, it's a status called "Harem". The current situation was without a doubt being influenced by this status point, depending on the interpretation of the stats, you can even say that the stat has actually warped their minds to see him in a positive light.

Because of this he was quite afraid whether or not he wanted to ask Kohaku about this, however, he thought that concealing this matter, would be way too insincere towards the girls.

“It’s about the status called harem”

“Hou, is there such a thing?”

Kohaku had an interested expression and her eyes were looking left and right. Probably in search of the status. Before long, she seemed to find it, and her face changed into a happy expression.

“This is interesting nou”

“Really?”

“Umu, the fact that this exists, that it has such an outstanding value, and that there is a drop in the value, it’s all very interesting”

“Huh? Why do you say it has dropped in value?”

“Isn’t it something that will drop in value?”

Being curious Kohaku asked Hera.

“Yes~ the passive skill “Idol” is an ability that will improve the more brides Taiyou has, even if the value of the status is at 0, even if Taiyou became the enemy of all human kind, it is not supposed to go into a negative figure desu~”

“Fumu, I wonder what kind of thing this is then?”

Taiyou thinks for a little, a certain thing was remembered.

“.....This is probably because of overflow, isn’t it?”

“Overflow?”

Kohaku was confused by the word, so the matter was explained to her. He explained that when he was level 3, the Harem value which was supposed to be at 0 points, suddenly reduced and instead of going into the negative values, it became 65535.

“I understand, for something that was way out of your expectations, it isn’t strange that the results are also out of everyone’s expectations, jyana. However, it seems that the effects of the ability remain unchanged ज्या. Even though plus has become minus,

the effects remain at 25% jyana”

“Doesn’t this mean that, when there is eight people like you girls beside me, this value will reach 0”

“It seems that way jyana. Moreover”

Kohaku’s face was smirking but only one side of her mouth was lifted.

“For you, it seems that your limit will be seven brides. Although it is still thousands of steps away before you are able to achieve seven brides, if one day you do manage to get an eighth bride, the value will immediately reach 0, and it may be the case that, you will no longer be able to maintain this relationship of a harem”

Saying this whilst maintaining the happy expression on her face, Kohaku turned to the three sisters.

“Aren’t you guys glad that you are counted as one person nou? if you were counted as three then you would of taken, two slots away from him jya”

Although he didn’t understand why they were clinging on to him with watery eyes before, now they were looking at him with clear eyes and even a smile on their faces.

“Kukuku, it’s good to know that you’ve gotten your spirits back up jya..... On the other hand, what’s wrong with you, it’s almost like you are the one getting the marriage blues now?”

“.....that’s not it. it’s just that, I remembered the fact that this figure actually existed, and it kind of bugged me”

“Fumu? What’s wrong with this figure? Rather than having 65535, would you prefer it if it said 255?”

“You really don’t know.....? Please understand me, if you don’t..... I.....”

For a while after that, a heavy atmosphere wrapped around the place.

Taiyou becomes silent, and Kohaku puckers up her eyebrows. The three sisters didn’t know exactly what was happening and so they were getting quite nervous for Taiyou.

Nobody knew what to say next and so everyone was just staying silent.

After a while, Taiyou let out a sigh and started to speak.

“Harem 65535..... I had almost forgotten that this kind of thing existed, but now I remember it. If I have to be honest with you guys, I think that my relationship with you guys, is all because of this particular status value”

“.....Ahh, so what you are trying to say is...”

Kohaku plopped her fist into her palm in realization and her eyes were smiling.

“That you are feeling sorry for the fact, that this figure has warped our minds to favour you”

“.....”

“I see, I have understood the situation. You girls, can you separate from him?”

“Yes”

“I understand”

“If it doesn’t work, it’s our turn to try to cheer him up next okay?”

The three sisters obediently parts from Taiyou.

“Umu, I will rely on it”

Kohaku nods, and the women seemed to be communicating with their eyes.

“You, bend your head down a little”

“Eh?”

“Bend it nojya”

“.....Alright”

Taiyou nods and stoops his head. He thought that perhaps he said something stupid

and made her angry. And he was prepared to get a slap on the face or something. Thinking in this manner, he slouches forward, closes his eyes and presents his face.

When he did—

Chuu. \*Kiss\*

He didn't get the slap on the face that he predicted. Instead, a smacking sound was heard, it was the feeling of her wet lips. Getting taken aback, Taiyou opened his eyes widely.

"K-Kohaku san"

"Did you think that I would slap you?"

"Umm... Yes"

"I wouldn't do such a thing, if I was going to do something like, that I'd use my fist and strike hard enough to make your face transform or to leave a scar nojya. Even so, isn't this good, that doing this is already effective..... enough"

"Wh, what do you mean?"

"It's just like you said jyarouna, the current relationship you have between me and the girls and the fact that we are getting along so well, might be because of that ability called Harem. However, even if that were the case that doesn't mean anything to me"

"Eh?"

"Even if it was because of this value of 65535, I am just really so happy to be together with you, this fact doesn't change. I desire you, and the you who accepted me for who I was, made me really happy nojya"

"B,but....."

"Taiyou-san, do you remember our dream?"

This time Kotone was asking him.

"Dream?"



“Yes, our dreams. Since we were kids, the three of us dreamed of loving the same man..... and being in a harem together”

“Right now we understand it, being involved with Taiyou-san, we think that Taiyou-san is definitely a person who is going to make a harem”

“It’s not because we were affected by this figure of 65535, it’s because 65535 people can be in your harem”

“That is...”

Although Taiyou wanted to say something, the three sisters had a tone that didn’t want to be interrupted.

“Just like Kohaku-san we are so happy right now. You listened to our selfish desires”

“We know that Taiyou-san is a person that will be able to fulfil our selfish desires, and even up to seven people “

“And being one of those people, we are..... Extremely, very, very, very, very happy!”

“If you need to hear more then..... I also, feel similarly to them nojya. I told you about how the Eternally little were not blessed when trying to find a companion right? Not only does my appearance look to be childish, but within, I am an old lady, and for you to accept me makes me so happy. You having, that ability has no relationship with my feelings for you nojya”

Hearing the girls talk like this one after another, Taiyou opened his eyes widely and was standing still in dumbfounded silence.

He did not think that they would feel this way about him, and to convey it to him in this kind of way.

However, for someone like Taiyou, the more extreme the situation, he would on the contrary become really calm and collect his cool, such is the peculiar characteristic of the boy named Taiyou.

Although his heart shook violently for an instant, he was able to recollect his thoughts in the next moment.

When he did, instead of feeling sorry or apologetic, he felt that they were truly beautiful human beings and he was filled with warmth.

Although he felt pretty happy recently, this particular case was by far the best one of them all.

They accepted him even though, he told them about having a status point called harem capped at 65535. He truly felt they were dear to him..... no for the first time, he felt this was definitely “love”.

Up until now, this question has always been repeated in his mind. And the amount of times... He thought that he felt love was not few either.

However right now, Taiyou was absolutely sure of it, he was completely sure of his intentions.

At first he thought that surely, with a status point like harem..... it was only meant for him to become happy and not the women with him..... However, his goal was not only for himself, but to also make the girls happy as well.

Therefore, he thought, more, and more “I want to make this happiness even stronger”. The more the number of women in his harem increases, not only will his happiness increase, but the girl’s happiness will also increase. That’s why he looked straight at the four of them and declared a vow.

“I understand. In that case, I..... will make a harem of seven girls!”

And to that, the girls responded by smiling radiantly.

## CHAPTER 55

# A BRIDES POWER/ IF YOU WANT TO SUCCEED THEN YOU'VE GOT TO AIM HIGHER?!

---

The two brides watched Taiyou with teary eyes.

Taiyou's bold proclamation that he would create a harem of seven brides was like he was a male actor who claimed he had experience acting in a female kabuki role, normally one would receive a grand bashing from the crowd if they arrogantly stated something like this, but fortunately for him, right in this place there was nobody who would denounce him.

When he mentioned creating a harem of "Seven Brides" not to mention the three sisters, even Kohaku was enraptured by his declaration, and they had glittering eyes.

Seeing their reactions, Taiyou became even more determined.

"Please try your best Taiyou-san!"

"We will do whatever we can to help out as well"

"Let's create a harem together!"

"When I look at you guys, I am reminded of Nohime" *(TL: Princess No; also known as Lady No; Also Known as Kicho)*

The three sisters turned their faces towards Kohaku in puzzlement after hearing her words.

"Ahh sorry, would it have been better if I called her Kicho? She is Oda Nobunaga's legal wife jya. If I had to choose, I much prefer to call her by her pet name Nohime jya"

"Heh, then what about Hideyoshi's wife? "

"Nei" *(TL: Nei; Nene, One, Nemoji, Kodai-in, these are all her aliases)*

“So you prefer that huh? Have you ever met them in person?”

Taiyou had a bittersweet smile on his face as he tilted his head. Because this is Kohaku they are talking about, there is actually a very real possibility that she may have known them in her life.

“Umm, you mean between us and..... Nohime?” *(Kotone)*

“Did Nobunaga’s wife have any special features?” *(Suzune)*

“You can’t be saying that, she’s also a triplet like us right?” *(Kazane)*

“No, there is no such thing. Whilst in the warring states period humans did gossip about women and about Gundam, there was not much gossip about twins. At those times, if there was more than two children in your stomach you would be branded an “abomination of nature” and the people would abhor you for it”

“No, I really don’t think there would be gossip about Gundam in that time period...”

Taiyou was trying to butt into the conversation, but he was completely ignored.

“The reason I said that you were similar to Nohime, is because she doesn’t get jealous at all the concubines Nobunaga had and she managed to bring them together and live in harmony *jya*. Because of this fact, Nobunaga could concentrate all his efforts into ruling the country and not worrying about his family matters. If you were to compare it to Tokugawa Ieyasu’s wife Lady Tsukiyama then Nohime would win as the model wife by a landslide *jya*”

“Isn’t that much, a natural thing for us to achieve?” *(Kotone)*

“After all, we are planning to make a harem” *(Suzune)*

“Yeah, if you were to write happiness into a word, for us that word would be read as harem” *(Kazane)*

“Umu, I completely agree with you guys *jya*” *(Kohaku)*

“Was is really that natural?” Taiyou pondered to himself. When he started to think about things, the thoughts in his mind gradually became wilder.

Kotone, Suzune, Kazane and Kohaku.

Taiyou continued to stare at the beautiful women around him who passionately talked about maintaining a harmonious harem together.

They looked really lovely, sweet and above all they were so precious to him.

The feelings inside of Taiyou gradually began to well up.

Deep within his chest all the way to the base of his crotch. Both these spots were throbbing with excitement and he started to feel a sweet aching.

Up until now, he has already experienced this feeling before. However, up till now there has always been someone to interrupt him.

Right now, there is only one obstruction who could stand in his way. Other than this one obstruction there was nothing else.

“.....”

Taiyou silently grabbed on to the little fairy, opened the window, brandishing the fairy above him as he threw her far away into the yonder with all his might.

When he did this, the girls had a suspicious look on their faces but this only lasted for a fleeting moment.

Taiyou approached the girls and gave them each a kiss one by one.

It was unnecessary for meaningless worlds, because all their feelings right at this moment were enough to convey their emotions.

That evening, Taiyou had become a man.



The morning air was cold.

On the edge of the St. Hanazono in the area between a river and a river bank was a bridge named Hiroshise Bridge.

Taiyou went here in the morning and gazed at the glittering river surface.

Although this common saying may be a little cliché, Taiyou was under the impression that the man he is today, is completely different to who he was yesterday.

Everything in his line of sight also seemed to change in comparison with yesterday, additionally the way he interpreted things and the way he felt about things was different.

He felt like his perspective had been widened.

Everyone who has experienced this feeling would know that it was the feeling of reaching enlightenment. If you were to ask the reason, that's because—

“Good morning desu, Taiyou-chan~”

“It's you.....?”

Hera who had not shown herself for the whole night, was now showing herself. She was enthusiastically calling out to him and Taiyou just returned her greeting with a bland response.

“Ohh, Taiyou-chan, you seem to be covered in sweat desu. What's wrong Taiyou-chan? Did you eat something expired or something~?”

“Hey, Hera tell me something”

“Yes desu~?”

“How do you think we can achieve world peace?”

“Taiyou-chan did you pick up the book of enlightenment or something!?”

Hera was so surprised that she vigorously danced around in the air.

“In my opinion this is how it will be possible, if I make every single woman in this world into my bride, the world will be able to achieve world peace, don't you think?”

“Hahii!?” (*Ehh!?*)



“I bet that Genghis Khan wanted to accomplish this. He wanted to make all the women in the world into his bride. He aimed for the ultimate goal of global peace by doing so”

“Excuse me..... Taiyou-chan?”

“He was not able to achieve such a thing, however, if it’s me, I feel like I can do it!”

“Wait a moment nodesu~! Taiyou-chan stop that train of thought for just one moment! Or more like, you can’t be trying to make such a hefty decision whilst you look so unwell nanodesuyo~!”

“I’ve already decided, first I will—-”

“You need to wait a minute!!”

“Guhahh!”Arggh!

Hera did her special attack of revolving her body and then crashing into Taiyou’s crotch.



**I BECAME A LIVING CHEAT**

[LIGHTNOVELSTRANSLATIONS.COM](http://LIGHTNOVELSTRANSLATIONS.COM)

The results were extremely effective!

“Uguu, Y-you..... Wh-why.....”

Taiyou crouched in pain whilst holding on to his groin, his forehead immediately dribbled with cold sweat, and he had a face filled with agony as he looked at Hera.

“Did you come out of your delusion desuka? If you are still crazy then I’ll do one mor—”

“I’m already sane, so please!”

Taiyou definitely could not withstand a combo attack, and he raised his voice whilst enduring the pain.

“Is that so~? Then Taiyou-chan, let me ask you, what is the thing you should be doing desuka~?”

“.....Not the whole w-world..... Just make seven brides”

Taking short gasps of air, he answered Hera’s question whilst suppressing his groins.

“That’s the spirit nanodesu~ Taiyou-chan’s job is not to think about world peace, but to think about creating a harmonious environment within the domestic family level nanodesu~”

“Y... yeah.....”

Taiyou nods, and was bearing the pain as best he could. Strangely enough after feeling the pain, his head cleared up to a new level of clarity.

“Your face seems to be one that has calmed down desune~”

“Yeah”

“Then that’s good desu. If Taiyou-chan suddenly went on a rampage and then started to rape girls, there is likely no one who could ever stop you desukara~”

“No..... I think you stopped me pretty easily”

Whilst saying this, Taiyou still felt a faint amount of pain throbbing in his groins. However, he understood Hera's point. To a certain extent, he understood his own strength, and if he were to become serious and . . . . do that to the girls, then it is likely that no one on this earth could stop him...

After achieving a sense of clearness in his mind, Taiyou reviews the present power he currently held within his own mind, and after that he asked Hera a question.

"Hey, Hera can you tell me the maximum level I can achieve?"

"Eh? Haven't I told you before? Or more like for a level up master like Taiyou-chan, wouldn't you have asked me a question like this ages ago~?"

"Well I managed to forget it somehow"

"Is that so desuka? Well I guess it's alright. Taiyou-chan can reach a maximum level of 100 nanodesuyo~"

"So it isn't level 99 but level 100? Ahh, I guess it makes sense, because each new ability gained is in multiples of 5"

"That's correct desu~"

"By the way, is there any other human beings in this world that can level up just like me? Judging from your way of speaking, I've been led to believe that there must be others like me"

"Well there is other people, but....."

"But?"

"There can only be one person with your ability to level up, at any one time, it is impossible for two people like you to exist at the same world nanodesu. When Taiyou-chan dies, I will also disappear, and at that point a new fairy will show up and attach themselves to another human being desu~"

".....You're speaking about a terrible thing like its nothing"

"You think so?"

Unlike Taiyou who had just gained a vital piece of information, Hera was completely nonchalant about the whole thing.

“Well, in any case, I have one last question. If I manage to increase my level to the absolute limit, just how strong will I become?”

“Taiyou-chan is a strength type person, so if you ask me how strong you will be, it’s a really difficult thing to answer, but..... ~”

Hera had folded arms whilst putting one of her hands against her chin and was in the thinking pose.

“If you were to ever fight someone 1 vs. 1 then you would without a doubt be the strongest person in this world desuyo~”

“The strongest in the world”

Taiyou repeated her words like a parrot, the reason he repeated her words in such a monotone voice was because, it all just seemed too unrealistic.

Suddenly, he thought about the Goth Lolita albino girl. *(TL: Shirokiyami)*

If I become the strongest in the world, then it would mean that I was stronger than even her.

The memory of having to endure her killing intent was still quite fresh in his mind, and just thinking about the fact that he would be much stronger than her, was enough to make him really excited about the prospects.

He pulls out his status within his mind once again to confirm the state of things.

Although it will still take a bit of time for him to reach level 100 from level 10, it was only a matter of time before he obtained this level.

His speciality was raising levels, and right now, he had clear purpose to follow. In such a case, he had no doubts that he would be able to reach level 100.

Right now all he needed was to take one step at a time, in order to advance to the next level.

He was still looking through his stats and it was at this time that he suddenly took a step backwards.

The “Idol” ability which increased a portion of his stats wasn’t working properly and right in front of his eyes, his stats had been reduced by half!



## CHAPTER 56

# A BRIDES POWER / THE (BRIDE) THAT REDUCES YOUR POWER

---

“—— !”

“What’s wrong Taiyou-chan?”

“My abilities..... have decreased in value”

“Eh?”

“My Status... It’s not at the correct value, it decreased!”

“Eh? You’re right, the abilities that “Idol” has increased has been revised to only one person desu”

“One person.....?”

Staring at the abilities, they were confirming it once again.

Just like Hera has said, the stats that has been increased by the skill “Idol” has all decreased by half across the board..... In other words, from two person’s worth, it has been reduced to only one person giving him a boost in the stats.

“What’s this about? Does “Idol” have a maximum range of effectiveness, and someone got out that range?”

“Let me see desune, this has no relationship to “Idol’s” effective range. The only reason it would decrease is if someone came to hate Taiyou-chan, or if they died——”

Without even waiting for Hera to finish her sentence, Taiyou impatiently burst into a run away from the river area he was in. He kicked the ground with his full strength and ran in the direction he came from.

With a speed that would have broken the track record of all the high school students,

Taiyou returned to “Taiyou’s Castle”, threw open the door and went inside. And without any hesitation he entered the biggest room in the first floor, which was his own room.

Inside of here, Kohaku’s appearance could be seen.

Under the futon that was laid on top of the tatami mat, she was wearing nothing but her birthday suit, and she merely had a poor excuse of a blanket to cover her body. Although he still remembered traces of her captivating body which he had explored last night, now was not the time to be distracted by such thoughts.

Taiyou restlessly looked around his room.

Kotone, Suzune and Kazane.

Before he left for the river bank area, he was sure that he saw the three girls lying down in bed with Kohaku quietly letting out their peaceful sleeping sounds. But as of right now, he could not find the three of them.

Taiyou flew out of the room, this time he went straight towards the second floor.

This was the designated room for the three sisters, and he didn’t even bother to knock as he barged into the room.

“Kotone, Suzune!”

Inside, he could see both Kotone and Suzune. The two of them was already wearing casual clothes, and they were huddling together in the center of the room.

After calling out their names, Taiyou had a really bad premonition about all of this.

That was because, the smallest of the three sisters, Kazane’s figure was nowhere to be seen..... But even more than the fact that he couldn’t see Kazane, was the appearance of the two people huddling in that awkward pose, it gave him a really bad feeling.

His movements stopped in place and he gazed at the two girls. When he did this, he somehow got the feeling like the two girls were within some sort of snowy mountain.

It was like they were in a freezing mountain that violently blew out snow and the two

people were trying to escape the cold by huddling together for any semblance of warmth.

He saw both Kotone and Suzune, in that kind of way right now.

Taiyou instinctively rubbed his eyes.

When he did, the optical illusion of the snowy mountains disappeared and the scene of the two girls trembling in place was emphasised as he drew closer towards them.

“Kotone, Suzune”

Once again he called out their names, this time he talked to them with a gentle undertone, as if he was speaking to a frightened child. Thereupon, the two girls reacted to his words and slowly looked up. Their round pupils gradually regained their focus and as they caught Taiyou’s appearance they both jumped up to hug him.

“Ahh, Ahh”

“Uuuu.....”

The two girls were letting out some strange moans as they continued to cling on to Taiyou. It was as if the two girls had degenerated into infants and Taiyou was holding on to them very gently.

“What’s wrong you guys? Where is Kazane?”

He asked them this question, but he was not able to get a response. The girls were only able to cling to him like a baby.

“What’s the matter jya?”

Kohaku arrived at the scene. First thing after rising, Kohaku was nude and merely had thin bed sheets wrapped around her body.

“Kohaku-san, Do you have any idea where Kazane is?”

“I don’t know, unfortunately..... Did something happen?”

Just a few seconds ago, she still had a voice that was half asleep, but in an instant,

Kohaku's tone of voice had become serious.

"I'm not sure, but she's the only one I can't find. Moreover—"

Taiyou showed the scene of the two girls who was being embraced by him to Kohaku. Perhaps the two girls didn't like the fact that he was loosening his grasp on them, but they leaked out another moan as they held on even tighter.

"This doesn't seem to be a joke jyano"

"Please take a look at my stats"

"Umu?..... It has been reduced by half jya"

Kohaku immediately notices the problem and the middle of her forehead had formed into a deep frown.

"The reason it decrease is not because of me..... If that's the case then, something may have happened to Kazane jyana"

"Yeah, that's why I wanted to hear the story from the girls, but they don't seem to be capable of talking right now"

"Umu....."

"Taiyou-chan, you ran so fast desuyo ~ Taiyou-chan"

Hera returned after finally catching up and Taiyou immediately asked her a question.

"Hera, can you please check the surroundings of this house for me?"

"Eh?"

"I can't find Kazane. Please go into the air and confirm this for me"

"I, I understand desu"

Hera flew from the door she just entered and after a short while she returned.

"She's not anywhere in the house desu. I flew within a 50 metre radius of this house

in order to make sure but she's not here desu"

"Something must of happened"

"Ahh....."

Taiyou and Kohaku were both nodding, but considering that they didn't have any clues as to what occurred, they were at a loss at what they should do.

Taiyou and the rest of the group approached the living terrace. Kotone and Suzune was still in their age regression state and Taiyou was cuddling them and soothing them in his embrace.

Beside him Kohaku took out her smartphone and was using it to make a call to somebody.

"How is it?"

"It's no good jya, they aren't responding"

Lowering the smart phone, Kohaku frowns. Just before she cut the connection, Taiyou could hear the answering machine announcements and it only made him feel more depressed.

"What on earth..... Went wrong?"

"Let me ask, have the girls ever taken any separate action before?"

"That is..... There is, even at school, sometimes they would separate from each other"

Taiyou recalled a story he once heard from Kotone and he relayed the main parts of this story to Kohaku.

"Even if the girls are apart their emotions and feelings are connected with something like a telepathic connection. If something like this existed, even if they were apart they should have been fine"

"I understand, no perhaps it is precisely because of this..."

"Because of this?"

“The loss of one of the party member”

Kohaku used words that wasn't generally popular for daily usage, however with this one sentence, Taiyou understood everything.

The moment he understood, he quickly looked towards Kotone and Suzune's face.

These triplets who were born together on the same day had something that regular humans did not have; it was not merely a connection of the blood. Seeing how they were regressing to this state of acting like infants, Kohaku is implying that something may have happened to Kazane's body.

“No way, that kind of thing is impossible—”

“Do you really want to cling to a false sense of hope?”

“.....I'm sorry”

“It's fine. More importantly we need to focus on the situation at hand. In this scenario we have two main options, one is to search for her by ourselves, and the other option is to contact the authorities and ask them to search for her jyaga.....” (*TL: Jyaga = however*)

“The police can't be relied upon”

Taiyou immediately replied and agreed to Kohaku's thoughts.

The fact that the three sisters are in this kind of situation in the first place, is because of their rotten father who wanted to sell them out. If the police are notified of Kazane being missing then obviously her father would also be notified, that's a thing that everyone would like to avoid. Because they didn't want such a thing to occur, they never had the choice of relying on the police in the first place.

“In that case, our only option is to search by ourselves”

“That's true”

“I will also help desu, if I search from the skies it may become easier desu”

“I’m relying on you”

The three people nodded towards each other, and after that they left the building in order to look for Kazane. The three of them separated in different directions as per Kohaku’s suggestion. Taiyou was also assigned to search a different location, however...

“Ahh, Ahh”

“Uuu.....”

After he tried to go out of the building, the two girls strongly clung on to Taiyou. Whenever he moved even a little bit, the two people would dislike it and he couldn’t really move around freely. He needed to do something about it. Taiyou frantically thought of ideas within his own head and tried them out. However no matter what he did, the girls were desperately holding on to him and wouldn’t let go.

“.....It can’t be helped”

Whilst puckering up his eyebrows, he lifted the two girls up into his arms. Each girl was in each one of his arms, it was almost like they were a small child. As expected the two girls willingly climbed into his arms, and this didn’t hinder his movements in the slightest.

The Taiyou right now, had no problems whatsoever holding these two girls in his arms. Thinking that perhaps this was the only way, Taiyou started to run while carrying the girls. In this kind of strange looking manner, Taiyou ran around town looking for any hints of Kazane’s whereabouts.

He hoped that perhaps, their psychic abilities would reignite like they did when they were kids and perhaps the two girls would be able to act like a sort of radar to detect where Kazane was. However other than clinging to him and disliking it when they parted, they didn’t show any other reactions.

“Kuu..... What am I supposed to do?”

He searched every nook and corner of St. Hanazono town, but he couldn’t even find a clue to follow. *(TL: St. Hanazono was previously translated as Seikasono Town)*



This only served to make him grow more restless.

“I found..... you”

Suddenly a voice from his back was heard. It was a very peculiar method of speaking, and it was a very familiar voice. To Taiyou this voice was like a voice sent from heaven. If it's her then perhaps—!

When he turned around, Shirokiyami was standing there but..... for whatever reason, she also brought along Kazane with her.

“Kazane ! ”

Taiyou called out her name and rushed towards her. Kazane seemed completely out of it and looked to be unconscious.

“Kotone? Suzune?”

For some reason, even though Kazane was right in front of them, Kotone and Suzune remained in their infant-like state.

## CHAPTER 57

# A BRIDE'S POWER/TRIPLETS

---

He suppressed his flustered emotions and confirmed Kazane's situation. Although she looks somewhat unwell, there aren't any conspicuous external wounds. From top to bottom, even her flat chest, looked the same as Kohaku. She looks as if she was sleeping, but on the other hand, Kotone and Suzune were still regressing into infants.

"What kind of situation is this?" Taiyou pondered.

"What Happened? "

"A traffic accident"

"A traffic accident? "

"Yeah, a car ignored the traffic light... and as she tried to avoid it, she slipped... and hit her head. "

"...Eh? "

"Since then, she has been... unconscious. "

"I wouldn't call something like this a traffic accident... or would you? "

Taiyou tilted his neck and imagined the scene. In the instance of listening to Shirokiyami's explanation, he imagined the worst, but in reality, it was a story-like event. Nevertheless, he was relieved it wasn't a large accident.

Taiyou let Kotone and Suzune down and placed them in front of Kazane. Because the two sisters didn't notice Kazane's situation and had decided to cling to Taiyou, he lead their gazes and made the sisters' hands touch.

At the moment they touched hands, the two older sisters started to cling to their unconscious younger sister. "Such a thing is expected" The understanding feeling was growing in Taiyou's chest.

“Leaving that... aside”

Shirokiyami came to talk with Taiyou, interrupting any time for deep thought. With her eyes facing forward, Taiyou was startled. To the default emotionless girl, it was rare to see her eyes fill with rage.

“When I brought her back to... The apartment..... you weren’t there”

“Ah”

“Were you trying to... escape... In the middle of the night? “

“No no no, why would I think of escaping? “

“You... owe me money”

“...Ah”

Being told that, The compensation for breaking her katana, and there is also her part of the reward for the request I gave her. Either way to a student like Taiyou, it is an outrageous amount of money, but at the same time, he is also convinced that it is a fair amount for the things she did for him. That’s why he won’t deny having this huge debt to her.

After all he left the mansion without telling her and escaped during the night, so it wasn’t unreasonable for her to think that he was trying to run away.

“Sorry”

“If you understand then... then I guess I don’t need to call my illegal loan shark... friend”

“Please don’t bring up such a scary person! I’m really sorry, it’s just that I recently moved”

“...So, you won’t try to... escape? “

“I swear that it’s not like that”

“I see”

Shirokiyami quietly nodded. The rage in her eyes steadily lessened.

It seems like she accepted his words.

“Then, you will pay... the debt? “

“When I become successful in life, then I will surely pay”

He said the same words that he had said before. There is no way he could pay that eight digit debt right now.

“I... understand”

With that, she seemed to have understood. “If she was calmer, she would have known that it was a given” thought Taiyou.

“Leaving that aside, let’s move. I want to settle Kazane down”

Taiyou said that, picked up three clinging sisters in his arms, and with Shirokiyami, headed in the direction of “Taiyou Castle”

In the Hayakawa sisters’ room of Taiyou Castle. In the incomplete room with barely any furniture, while still tightly hugging each other, the girls slept. With Kazane, who experienced an accident, in the middle, Kotone and Suzune were on her left and right side, clinging to her. After Taiyou confirmed the situation and left the room, Kohaku was waiting there.

“They’ve rested well, I see”

“Aah...”

“Don’t make such a face. From what I see, there is no external wounds on their bodies, and eventually, it will be as if nothing happened”

“I hope so”

“Is there something bothering you? “

“Please confirm for me as well, has the “Idol” status’s compensation still not returned?

“Hmph... it’s true”

Kohaku, her eyes changing to be big and round, made a gesture to confirm.

“If it’s not you who caused the reduction, then it must be the girls. Even though the girls have already returned safely... why isn’t it fixed?”

“Maybe there is a cool down on the skill because you spent the night together?”

Kohaku said teasingly.

“Even if that were really the case, that would be better than the alternative”

“Well, anyways, don’t mind it. For now, we should just wait for their condition to get better... and until she wakes up... furthermore “

“Eh? “

“If your abilities did decrease then all you have to do is get it back up right? Or are you saying that after spending the night with them, you are the one with a cool down?”

“...Of course not”

“Then things that you need to do should be clear now right?”

“...I see”

Taiyou moved his mouth and made a faint smile. He thought that it is certainly as Kohaku said. “Idol” showed that if he were to lose the three sister’s love, he would just have to get it back.

After spending the night with the three sisters those were his real thoughts. At the same time, thanks to Kohaku he was reminded of this very simple fact, and it made his heart feel warm.

“Thank you very much”

Taiyou said that, crouched down extremely naturally, and kissed Kohaku’s lips.

“Mu”

With such a thing suddenly happening to her, Kokaku did not expect to be kissed all of a sudden. But, it was only for a moment. Kohaku touched her lips that were kissed by Taiyou and had a joyful face.

Her face was so cute, so he kissed her one more time and then her face began to flush. After that, the two went down the stairs, side-by-side, to the living room terrace. Shirokiyami was waiting there. She sat quietly in the sofa set up in the living room terrace and was blankly looking up at the ceiling.

She looked so defenseless that the words that Yurikago had said previously about her being the “Strongest Teenager” seemed like a complete lie.

Her elusive figured looked like it was about to disappear at any moment. Looking at her like this, Taiyou wanted to pull off a childish prank. The last time he fought with her was before he turned level 5. Now that he’s level 10, he is certain that he was become stronger. But that’s not all; he also had the “Idol” skill’s compensation.

The last time they fought, he was utterly defeated. However, this time...? Taiyou thought that, and switching over halfway to ninja-like steps, he moved closer to her. Step, Step—.

He moved closer one step at a time. She was just looking up at the ceiling and she didn’t seem to notice that Taiyou was coming closer.

(This time—)

Within range. Taiyou kept moving closer, with a clenched fist, until he reached the distance where he could attack her; however, as soon as he did reach, the white girl’s figure completely disappeared before his eyes.

Not as a metaphor, but she completely disappeared, literally. In an instant, he felt a murderous intent from behind. It explosively expanded, and overwhelmingly swallowed up his whole body. It feels exactly same as the first time I met her.

“Free... ze”

Along with the sound of her unique breathing, there was also something sharp pressed on his back. It was not hard to imagine that it was her beloved sword, since

he could feel a cold metal object digging deep into his skin.

Taiyou trembled at the thought that in one moment, all of this happened.

“Can I ask what and how did you do that? “

Taiyou raised his arms and asked while trying be calm despite the situation.

“I just... moved... very quickly”

“You make it sound easy”

Taiyou smiled ironically. “Without any tricks or cheats, huh?” he thought.

“It isn’t... easy. Going head-to-head with you... is dangerous. That is why... I used all my powers to go around you”

Because Shirokiyami said that and lowered the tip of the sword, Taiyou also slowly lowered his arms and looked behind him.

“Do you really need to be that cautious? “

“That power... you’re... strange”

“But what is your impression? “

“Moreover... you seem... to have gotten stronger... again”

“You realized? From what I saw last time, didn’t you say that a conclusion couldn’t be made? “

“It’s a woman’s... intuition”

“Doesn’t woman’s intuition work in a much different way? “

“How... did you get stronger? “

“That is...”

Taiyou was hesitating, because he couldn’t give an honest answer to her question. At



the turn of last night, he drew a boundary line in his heart. He decided to confide about his level-ups to only to the people he likes and becomes his bride.

However, he was hesitant to how he was going to deceive her. But there was Kohaku, who gave him a lifeboat.

“Our husband becomes strong with love. He becomes stronger with each new bride “  
(*Kohaku*)

“I... see” (*Shirokiyami*)

“You’re satisfied with that explanation?!“ (*Taiyou*)

“Yeah... because... you’ve become a lot stronger all of a... sudden” (*Shirokiyami*)

After talking like this Kohaku looked up towards the top of the stairway.

In front of her line of sight was the appearance of the three sisters. The three were clearly different from before; they had returned to their usual self.

## CHAPTER 58

### A BRIDE'S POWER/ BUDDING BRIDE

---

Taiyou ran up the stairs in a dash and embraced the three girls closely. As if he was trying to feel their temperature, he hugged them really strongly.

"Taiyou-san"

"Umm, It hurts a little"

"I give, I give"

The three sisters were in pain as he hugged them too hard and they were appealing to him to loosen his grip.

They gave him a clear answer.

Unlike how they were moments ago, the girls were able to give him a proper answer.

And Taiyou felt really relieved that they were fine. When he saw them in that infant-like state..... he was imagining all the worst possibilities and now that he saw them safe and sound, it made him feel so much relief that it brought tears to his eyes.

"I'm glad, that you guys have returned" *(Taiyou)*

"I'm sorry to have made you worry" *(Kotone)*

"We became weird again didn't we?" *(Suzune)*

"It's because I hit my head....." *(Kazane)*

"No, as long as you guys are okay, then I'm happy" *(Taiyou)*

Taiyou loosened his grip slightly, but he didn't completely let go of his embrace.

When he was reminded of their pitiful state his chest would feel tight, because no matter how anyone would see it, when Kazane went missing, the two girls seemed to

have gone “Crazy”.

Taiyou strongly thought within his own mind that he never wanted to see them like that ever again.

In order to make sure of it... he embraced the three girls closely and thought of various different plans and ideas.

“.....”

“What’s wrong jya? Why are your eyes looking like that? Do you want to be hugged by him as well?” (*Kohaku Speaking to Shirokiyami*)

“That is... Not really. I just feel a little..... strange”

“Strange?”

“After the girls showed up..... He who ran up the stairs..... clearly became strong, er”

“Oh, it’s about that?” (*Kohaku*)

Downstairs, Kohaku and Shirokiyami were having a conversation with each other.

Taiyou confirmed his own status window, and just like Shirokiyami mentioned, the moment the three sisters regained their sanity “Idol” reactivated itself and he regained the 25 % bonus of having two brides.

And most likely Kohaku also confirmed this fact at the same exact time and she proudly spoke.

“Didn’t I tell you before jya? our husband becomes stronger when he is loved by us. When the three sisters who were on the verge of death reobtains their vitality, it is obvious that he would become stronger—In other words, you girls were like broken wings nanojya”

“..... ? ”

Hearing Kohaku’s words Shirokiyami looked puzzled as she tilted her head.

She was the type of girl that didn't understand those type of jokes.

"But..... if that's the case, then"

After saying in a small voice, she nodded in affirmation.

"Do you understand it?"

Taiyou went down the stairs slowly, while still embracing the three sisters in his arms.

"I have no choice..... but to do it" (*Shirokiyami*)

"You need to do what?" (*Taiyou*)

"Even you said it yourself..... your power... is physically... weird"

"Ahh, I did say that didn't I? " (*Taiyou*)

Nodding, he remembered the conversation he had with her when he met her before. He certainly did say something along those lines.

"Human strength is decided by muscle strength... and spirit..... is what I was taught. Sometimes, there is also magical power. But, in your case, you aren't different..... from normal boys. But, in actuality, you are more..... no, extremely, strong"

"....."

Taiyou decided to maintain a serious face, no a concrete poker face. Muscle strength and spirit, in other words, the laws of physics. It is a very natural thing that human strength is supposed to be decided on only those factors.

However, unlike that, Taiyou's strength called "Level Up" deviates from normal laws of physics. The three sisters and Kohaku, who were apart of his family of harem, knew this, but he didn't really want to confide to Shirokiyami who hasn't become a part of his harem..... he at least wanted to keep this a secret from her.

That is why he had a poker face. Whether or not Shirokiyami notices or not, she gave out her own speculation, speaking out once again.

"I can only guess that... you have become stronger with a type of power that I don't

know about" (*Shirokiyami*)

"I see, Although you are expert in combat, you have quite the old fashioned way of thinking jyana?" (*Kohaku*)

"Is it really... the power of love?" (*Shirokiyami*)

".....Yeah" (*Taiyou*)

Taiyou nodded without hesistation. Strictly speaking about the power of love..."Idol" is not the main way that he increases his power. In any case he wanted to hide the truth..... Taiyou had become a man when he 'connected' with the girls last night and he had already decided the path he was going to take from now on.

"Is that so....." (*Shirokiyami*)

"Don't you think that it's fantastic jyaro?"

"That is..... I'm not really sure" (*Shirokiyami*)

After saying that, Shirokiyami once again said "I don't undersand"but this time in a murmur.

Finished with their conversation, Taiyou and Kohaku decided to take a bath together. In the design of this certain apartment building, the communal bathroom that is used is on the first floor, connecting to the living room terrace.

There, Taiyou and Shirokiyami entered. By the way, the three sisters were on the opposite side of the building in the gallery (*an old-fashioned way to say kitchen*), preparing a meal.

Back in the bathroom, Kohaku was washing Taiyou's... back.

The both of them were wearing their birthday suits. Taiyou sat on the wooden bath seat, and Kohaku, kneeling, was scrubbing his back. (*TL: Birthday suit = completely naked like a baby*)

Taiyou was slouching forwards as Kohaku began to daringly scrub his back and various other places.

“I would be happy if you were a little calmer” (*Kohaku*)

“Calmer?” (*Taiyou*)

“That’s right jya, you are the master of our harem, it’s an obvious thing for us to provide this kind of service for you, you don’t have to be so awkward and you should keep your chest held high jya. Even now, whenever I work for you, don’t you still find it difficult to accept jyarō?”

“That is..... well”

“Stop saying that and be more confident..... Even if you behaved a little more arrogantly, that would still be better jya”

“That’s.....”

“That’s probably impossible” *Taiyou* wanted to say.

He understood what *Kohaku* wanted to tell him, after all as the husband who ruled over the household, he needed to conduct himself appropriately to live up to the role.

However, right now, he doesn’t feel like he would be able to act in this way. This is because, he truly thought that making *Kohaku* work for him was a bad thing for him to do, moreover he couldn’t really keep composed especially when he saw her naked body right in front of him, his heart would start beating so fast and he felt like he was going to go crazy.

“Well, the vibe and style you exude right now is not that bad”

“Style, huh?”

*Taiyou* forced a bitter laugh. *Kohaku* filled the bucket with water and washed away the bubbles on *Taiyou*’s back.

“Umu, it’s all done jya”

“.....Then, next is your turn”

Although he can’t behave completely composed, at least to have the proper

skinship..... he could still offer to wash her back for her as well. Taiyou turned his head around to look towards Kohaku.

At that precise moment, an unbelievable sight appeared before him..... a figure that shouldn't be standing there was right in front of him.

White skin and long white hair. Without wearing her usual black clothes, this girl standing in front of him was thoroughly white. Shirokiyami was standing naked right in front of the bath's entrance.

"Wha..... at, at, at, at"

Taiyou became flushed at her arrival while Kohaku admired her body.

"What are you doing! Why did you suddenly enter?"

"Those three..... they said, to enter the bath until dinner is ready" (*Shirokiyami*)

"Uoi!"

"Was it, bad, to enter?"

"If you used common sense, of course it's bad!"

".....Is that advise coming from you as..... this household's master ?" (*Shirokiyami*)

"If only that were the case, then I would be happy" (*Kohaku*)

"That's not the point at all!" (*Taiyou*)

Taiyou retorted to both of them at the same time.

"Thinking sensibly, of course it's bad to appear naked before a guy that has no such relation with you whatsoever!"

"Umu, it's because men are like beasts. If a pure white rabbit like you isn't careful, you might get completely eaten with a single gulp"

Kohaku chuckled.



“If that’s what you are worried about..... it’s fine” *(Shirokiyami)*

Shirokiyami talked in a composed manner, and put her foot into the bathroom. She moved forward one step while Taiyou stepped back as if he was being pushed.

“W-what is, fine?”

“As weak as you are right now..... I can easily cut it off”

“What are you going to cut!?”

Thinking of her disturbing words, Taiyou’s voice changed to a falsetto.

“Umu, within a 0.1 seconds of closing your eyelids, a tragedy could happen jya”  
*(Kohaku)*

“I don’t even, need.01 seconds” *(Shirokiyami)*

“Don’t encourage her insanity!”

Taiyou retorted, but Shirokiyami, who was tired with this conversation, briskly faced in the direction of faucet and turned the nozzle to the red direction to turn on the hot water. And then, she put the wooden bucket which was filled with hot water over her head, and just like that she went towards the direction of the bathtub.

“Wait a second, are you going to enter just like that?” *(Taiyou)*

“.....? That’s, right, something wrong?” *(Shirokiyami)*

“No, you need to wash yourself properly!” *(Taiyou)* *(TL: Japanese people have a culture of thoroughly cleansing their bodies before entering the hot tub)*

“I did wash myself” *(Shiroki)*

“Don’t let her enter before washing her properly. Kohaku-san” *(Taiyou)*

“Umu, Leave it to me. Indeed, if a girl of a marriageable age like her is taking a hurried bath, it won’t do nojya”

Taiyou relied on Kohaku to take care of Shirokiyami and as naturally and quickly as

possible he got dressed and left the bathroom, there was no way he could stay in there any longer.

if you want to know why, then it's because —.

Seeing Kohaku's delicate naked body right in front of him, made Taiyou..... have a grand reaction down below.

## CHAPTER 59

# A BRIDE'S POWER/GOAL AND DECLARATION

---

“2, 3, 5, 7, 11, 13, 17, 19, 23, 29.....”

Taiyou was composedly counting prime numbers. Considering the source of his knowledge the extent of the effect is uncertain, but he is sure that it has some effect to himself because he'd tested it before and knew the results.

By the way, another example of a way to calm it down is to imagine about middle-aged men who are making love with each other, doing “that” will indeed be a miracle drug but it is also a double-edged sword that will deal a great amount of damage to your mind, so unless in extreme circumstances it is a forbidden move that is prohibited.  
*(TR: he's trying to calm down his genitals)*

Meanwhile, by the time he'd counted up to around four digit numbers he'd considerably calmed it down, but.

“But really, your body is really amazing huh. If there's any secrets please teach me jya”

“It's maidens body, therefore. It is the best for fight, ing”

“Fumu”

“Your body figure, changed. To a woman's..... bo, dy”

“I see, you are even able to see through this. Umu, husband made me a woman jya”

“Those three, too”

“An expert's eyes is not for decoration, huh”

The two's conversation that can be heard through the door made his tear-dropping effort for nothing. Taiyou raised a strange voice “Uga—”, sloppily wearing his clothes he jumped out of the bathroom.

“Huh? Taiyou-san what happened”

As he jumped out he ran across to Kazane. She was holding Taiyou's clothes in her hands, it looks like that she was on her way to bring his change of clothes. Of the triplet sisters, she is the most petite girl. Her body wasn't that different to the body figure of Kohaku who is an eternally little.

Shirokiyami's words flashed in his mind. Taiyou instinctively, stared intently at Kazane's body.

Even like this—her body could now be considered as a grown woman. *(TR: It is said in Japan that girls turn to a woman after losing virginity)*

"Umm..... what is it?"

"Uu" *(Taiyou groaning)*

Kazane tilted her head.

It's a lovely gesture, but Shirokiyami's words *(woman's body)* got stuck on his mind.

Taiyou got more and more, felt that the reaction has become stronger. *(TR: his son's reaction)*

"No, it's nothing. is that my change of clothes?"

"Ah, yes, I was about to bring it"

"Thanks, I'll change in the room, so I'll take that"

Taiyou took the clothes from Kazane, and walk towards his room. The more he is cornered is the more his thoughts become clear and calmer, that is the special quirk of the boy called Taiyou.

He thought calmly, what he should do to calm this surge *(arousal)* that he couldn't help, that is immediate, but also is not going to be noticed by the women in this house.

He goes to his room and closes the door without turning back. He did not lock it, that wasn't necessary. He stood straight in his place and closed his eyes. And imagined, naked middle-aged men that were making love to each other.

“Bhleeeeeeeagh” (*Taiyou vomiting*)

Taiyou, in exchange to great amounts of damage in his spirit, chose the way to protect his dignity and sanctity.

Taiyou is laying on his side on the living room terrace’s sofa, exhausted like cripple. The forbidden move’s side effects to the mind can’t be measured, but in experience, the move’s effect should last throughout the day so it was worth doing it, he thought.

If you say that it’s just the meaningless pride of high school boys, then you are right. If this was a man who is around his thirties, that man could make a tent out of his crotch in public a joke because of the man’s nerves that was learned through experience, but he still had yet to reach such frontiers.

For better or worse, he was pure at heart just like those of his age, the result was this.

“Taiyou-san, are you free right now”

Together with that voice, this time Suzune showed up.

She squatted sideways, looked up Taiyou’s face from below.

“Huh? Are you okay Taiyou-san, you seem to look like you’re exhausted”

“I’m fine, rather than that, do you need something?”

“Ah, Yes. There’s something I need you to look at”

“Something to look at?”

‘I wonder what it is’, Taiyou said and tilted his head.

“Yes, please turn around”

Straightening out his posture on the couch, ‘Hmm?’ He said and turned around.

And then, reacting in a different meaning than that of little while ago.

What was there was white, a more magnificent white than pure white. White skin and white long hair, overlapped white one-piece dress on the top, and worn over that is a

white cardigan decorated with lace frills. It's harmonious look, made one think that it was done on purpose, but.

"How beautiful....."

Her appearance was, so beautiful that Taiyou can't help but to whisper those words.

"I knew it right. The image I was going for rabbit-chan from Snow Country"

"Hello, I am a Snow rabbit..... de, su. If I get lonely I eat..... my ba, bies"

"You're going to eat them? Wasn't it that when rabbits get lonely they die"

"But, rabbits eats their babies too"

"I know, when I was a kid I was keeper of the animal shed so I know!"

Taking advantage that Shirokiyami made a boke, Taiyou looked away will he tsukkomis. (*boke=playing stupid as joke, tsukkomi=returning/reacting to jokes*)

The forbidden move he used earlier was still effective so his body doesn't react, but as a result his heart pounded so fast it reached its dangerous zone all at once.

"Just as I thought, Shiro-chan compared to black clothes, white clothing suites you much better" (*Suzune*)

"Really?"

"Of course! Taiyou-san think's so too right"

".....W,Well"

Taiyou replies stutteringly, that answer was the best he could give. Shirokiyami was just so cute that he was unable to look at her directly. "This is bad, need to do something", these were his thoughts right now.

"Well, I guess I'll go back where Koto-chan and Kaze-chan is. Shiro-chan should take your time here with Taiyou-san"

Taiyou reached out his hand, and tried to stop Suzune from going. But he doesn't reach

in time, and Suzune turned around without hesitating and disappeared back to the kitchen. Taiyou and Shirokiyami was left behind, an awkward air flows between the two, Taiyou couldn't do anything but look away from her.

"As I thought....."

"Huh?"

"It doesn't look... nice?"

"I, It's not like that"

"But you're making a weird face. weirder than, when I'm wearing black"

"That is....."

".....As I thought, I'm going to, change"

She said and tries to stand up, but Taiyou in a breath, grabbed her hand and stopped her.

"Wait..... it looks good on you"

"Eh?"

Shirokiyami doubted the words that Taiyou spoke.

"It looks really good on you, compared to black, I'm sure you look better this way"

"But, I, if it isn't black..... the colors, are insufficient"

".....Is that why you wear black?"

"Yes"

Shirokiyami silently nodded. The signs of her leaving disappeared, Taiyou slowly let go of her hand. A girl that looks fragile, and have an ephemeral atmosphere, but on the other hand she was also an expert who is told to be the world's strongest.

He thought that it was the first time he saw the side of her that looks quite human. A



complex.

If you think about it, it was a natural thing, she had a complex with her appearance. That's why she preferred to wear black laced dress.

His feelings, advances further. It's not like he was aroused with a naked body, or his heart pounded because of the dress she was wearing. This was the first time he was able to touch her human-like side, Taiyou felt like he was looking at a celestial maiden that landed in the human world.

In other words, in love. That's right, Taiyou fell in love with her.

"What's, wrong?"

While making sure of how he felt staring at her, the side being stared at felt suspicious.

From that gesture his breathe finally became shallower, thinking his throat has dried up.

This feeling for the first time, this thing that was about to start.

Because of that Taiyou became nervous, at the same time became composed.

"Can you be, my wife?"

After a deep breath, he looked towards Shirokiyami, looking at her straight in the eye, he confessed to her. There was no hesitation in his voice what so ever.

".....Are you serious?"

"I'm serious"

"What..... about, them?" (*The other girls*)

"We are a harem, so it's alright"

"I'll enter, the harem too?"

"If it's possible"

“.....I see”

Shirokiyami nodded. She stared at Taiyou, her red eyes seemed like they can see the depths of his heart. Taiyou had his chest held high, his feelings were for real. Eventually, Shirokiyami shook her head.

“It’s no good, for now”

“For now?”

“If you’re not stronger than me, no way”

“So I just need to be stronger then?”

“If you beat me then, fine”

“I got it”

Taiyou immediately answered. The conditions Shirokiyami gave was simple and clear.

Although, it lacked sex appeal this was a trifling matter.

“I’ll become strong, and defeat you”

Taiyou made the decision, he looked straight at her and declared.



**I BECAME A LIVING CHEAT**

[LIGHTNOVELSTRANSLATIONS.COM](http://LIGHTNOVELSTRANSLATIONS.COM)

# CHAPTER 60

## AOBA'S SECRET

---

“Please excuse me”

After bowing deeply, Taiyou closed that faculty office's door. He looked up and raised his head, looking up ceiling and took sighed together the damage he took mentally.

“Taiyou-san”

Suddenly, a worried voice was heard from the side. When he looked around, the triplets' eldest sister Kotone was there. She looked at him with troubled eyebrows. Because she looked so cute, Taiyou quickly confirms the surroundings, pushed her towards the wall, put a hand on the wall then kissed her lips.

“Ta,Ta,Ta,Taiyou-san??”

“My bad, you looked so cute so spontaneously”

“Cu—what are saying Taiyou-san~, I'm being worried here, and you tell me that I looked c-cute...”

Remembering what was just said moments ago and what just happened, Kotone puffed up and blushes, she covers her lips with a lightly clenched fist.

Getting pushed to the wall with no resistance also looked cute, probably quite cuter than her worried face. But, if he rides the flow of nature, what would happen would at least be attached by an R-rating mark, so Taiyou kept himself from doing anything. After a while Kotone came back to herself and cleared her throat, blushing asked.

“Taiyou-san, was it alright”

“Yeah, I was only scolded by the teacher a little. After all, considering that I skipped school for a couple of days, it's only natural. Other than that, I was addressed strongly about my phone not connecting, not being able to be contacted at all is not a good thing they said”

In this particular school, cell phones or smart phones are not prohibited, rather, it was something they recommended you to use. Not to mention that within the students, either it will be professors or students, having a direct line without the passing through parents they think of it as a convenience.

Taiyou rested from school for a few days while he solved the triplet's problem, so he forgot to repair the smart phone that was broken a little while ago. Those things happened at the same time, so when he finally attended school since the last few days he was thoroughly scolded by his homeroom teacher.

"But, you girls weren't mentioned at all, why was that? you rested school just as much with me"

"We were going to cooperate with Daddy's experiment, so we told the school that we're going to be absent from school for a little while"

"I see"

Remembering the girls' dad, Taiyou was convinced. Whatever the reason is, when parents are the one who request leave for their kids, the teachers generally won't ask too many questions or decline their leave of absence. Although he still couldn't forgive the father for what he tried to do, Taiyou was thankful for the result. After their conversation was finished, Taiyou and Kotone walked toward the classroom. Suddenly, Kotone was startled.

"Ah!, Suzu-chan and Kaze-chan are jealous"

"Huh? Ahh, the thing I did to you earlier was conveyed huh"

"Yes, by Taiyou-san..... being done something like that I was so happy, so it was noticed by the two, and they're conveying that they feel very jealous to me"

"Is that so, if that's the case I should also do it to the other two later then"

"Thank you very much!"

Kotone thanked him with a wholehearted smile. Rather than being jealous, declaring he would drive the other two sisters to the wall and kiss them, she was actually saying thanks with all her heart. That girls' relationship seemed rather interesting, and for

Taiyou right now, their relationship was a good thing. If this weren't the triplets that confessing he wondered what would've happened, his interests sprung up.

"Kya!"

Because he was a little preoccupied with his thoughts, he couldn't avoid the girl that jumped out of the corner completely. The girl collides with him, and as if she ran up against a wall, she bounced off his body.

If it continues like this, she was going to land on her hips, so Taiyou grabbed her hand instinctively.

"Are you okay..... Ah!"

"Thank you very much..... Ah!"

As the two confirmed each other's appearance they both raised a voice. He collideded to somebody he met before in the rooftop, her trade mark look was a long straight ponytail, it was Miyabi Aoba.

The sorry face she was making after colliding disappeared in an instant and was replaced with an expression of pure hostility against Taiyou.

"Natsuno Taiyou....."

It also emerges in her words. She irritatingly groans Taiyou's full name, and snorted before leaving.

"You're being despised huh"

"Yeah"

Taiyou smiles wryly, and Kotone wrinkled her eyebrows. The both of them have a relation with Aoba, but he truly didn't understand why she hated him so much.

Lunchtime, Taiyou was walking the corridor alone. The three sisters went to the rooftop earlier, and prepares for lunch. Taiyou wanted to go together, but the girls told him that they want him to come when everything's ready, so he complied.

Leaving the classroom five minutes later, he slowly walked to the destination. He went up to the fourth floor where the third-year student's classroom would be, and just before going up to the roof top he saw a commotion happening in the corridor ahead.

Surrounded by onlookers, the commotion develops considerably. Taiyou found a familiar face in the onlookers. Approached him and called.

“Nakashima, what going on in here”

“Oh if isn't it Natsuno, it's just that, there were rumors a couple was having an affair, it's that kind of story, and then the messenger of justice appeared, so they started to have a dispute”

“I see... I don't really get it though”

In short, it was about entanglements of love or something, but the ally of justice somehow appeared at that time, this is the extent of what Taiyou understood. Nothing's going to happen listening to Katsuki's explanation, so he went towards the center of the commotion.

There were three people there. One man and two women. The man has gold hair and pierced ears, wearing his uniform sloppily he looked like he's wearing a beginner's outlaw look. One of the girls were decently cute, but she influenced by the man, she had a flashy getup and was wearing make-up. And the last one—

“Miyagi Aoba”

“Yeah, it's Aoba-chan”

Katsuki responded to Taiyou's whisper. As sociable as Katsuki is, just like with Kotone and the girls, he calls Aoba with a -chan.

“What? Say that thing one more time!!”

“I said that having an affair is the lowest”

“That's none of your business, ain't it?”

“It's not about being my business or not, it's the worst thing to do, so I told you it's the



lowest”

Hearing the conversation and combining it with Katsuki’s explanation, he somehow understood the situation. He doesn’t really understand why she is so meddlesome in these types of matters, but at least he understood that she really hates the thing called “affairs”.

If he thought about it, after being confessed by Kotone and girls, she was also imposing, even going as far as asking who Taiyou liked the best.

“Even so, you shouldn’t flare up at someone like that”

“Yes? Did you say anything Natsuno”

“Nope”

Taiyou shook his head. Unintentionally he muttered out the words words, but it’s something that Katsuki shouldn’t be told. He tried watch the development of the events as it is, but suddenly, the situation changed rapidly.

“Don’t joke around with me!!”

The gold-haired-piercing boy gets in enraged, pushing Aoba’s chest away. The power that comes from physical difference made Aoba stagger, tipping her balance, she flew backwards. The momentum doesn’t decline as she were pushed back against the wall, and with the “open window” at her back..... she fell towards outside.

Aoba shortly reacted a second late and reached out her hand to grab the window frame..... and grasped air. Just like that, her body disappeared beyond the window, pulled by gravity she fell.

Falling from the fourth floor was deadly. Taiyou who was there, “imagined” a scene like that.

“Aoba-chan!!”

From the Katsuki’s side, Taiyou kicked the ground and ran, and chased after Aoba who started to fall, and jumped out the window without hesitation. Lastly, he kicked the wall to accelerate, caught up to Aoba although having a late start, he held and squeezed

her body tight. After doing that, he quickly verifies the surroundings for any place to hold on to.

“Hn!!”

With sheer will power he reached out his hand, and grabbed the school outer wall. It was literally a small crack in the wall. The moment his finger clutched it, he used his full strength. He heard the sound of his muscles stretching and churning, but the falling momentum had stopped. With a mere four fingers’ strength, he stopped the fall of two people completely. When he noticed it was only two floors left before the ground, it was barely the height from hitting the ground completely.

“Fuu.....”

Taiyou let out a deep sigh. At worst he was resolute on covering her and falling first, but somehow he found somewhere to grab so he felt relieved. While dangling like a monkey with one hand, Taiyou dexterously fixed Aoba’s position in his other hand. And while jumping off, he put his arms around her back and the back of her knees to make sure of her safety while landing

In that position, with a bam they landed. The back of his legs numbed but did not mind. Hugged with a princess carry, Aoba had no injuries at all. cheers were heard from above. When he looked, many students leaned out the window, an applause was sent to the (Knight) Taiyou who saved the (Princess) Aoba.

“Daddy, Mommy”

Speaking about the Princess, she was shaking in his arms, making her body small, trembling, and calls out to her parents. That appearance of hers was so cute, if only she were normally this loveable, Taiyou thought. The next instance, Taiyou doubted his ears.

“Mama..... Mother.....”

“Hm?”

“Ah!.....”

Aoba was startled and came back to herself, pushed Taiyou away, stood up, blushes

and ran away.

“Daddy, Mommy..... Mama and Mother?”

Taiyou was left behind standing dumbfounded in that spot, he had an expression as if he had just been bewitched by a fox.

# CHAPTER 61

## AOYAMA AKIHA

---

Taiyou watched Aoba's back and she was quickly leaving as if she was running away from him, there was no sign of her usual strong attitude.

Right before she left, she spoke of four different names. Daddy, Mommy, Mama, and Mother.

Besides the fact that a high-school student calls her parents when she is frightened and regardless if that was a good thing or bad thing. Rather than that, the problem is that the number of people she called was four. Taiyou was confused as to the meaning behind this and he was in deep thought.

"There's no way, right?"

What came to his mind was something, even he thought was ridiculous, there's no way for it to be like that he laughed.

"You're good, is that the way you make girls fall for you one after another?"

He was called from behind suddenly, Taiyou turned around swiftly. When he turned around, there was no one looking towards him from the school building. Therefore, he looked around his surroundings one more time and that's when he heard the voice again.

He heard it from above. Diagonally, from the second floor's window. Sitting on the window frame that was grandly opened, was one girl crossing her legs.

A slender physique that can be seen even above her school uniform, and an abundant chest that strongly appeals its presence. The black over-knee socks and a pleated skirt, she had a stunning golden-ratio.

Her glossy chest nut-colored hair flutters, she was rocking her body a little so it looks dangerous from here, but the smile that she was wearing was so bright you wouldn't think she was in danger.

“Make them fall for me?”

Taiyou was trying to hide that fact she totally captivated him with her looks, pretended to be cool as he returned the question.

“Yeah, you’re that person aren’t you? The harem person. The guy that goes out with [Staircase Girl’s]”

“.....Yeah, That’s right”

To her words, Taiyou nodded slightly. Staircase Girl’s was referring to the nick names of the three sisters, and this is what people called them behind their backs. The girls were triplets and although their faces looked the same just like a sliced Kintaro-ame candy, but somehow their height was on three-level difference, they were called inside the school with different kinds of names. *(PR: Kinato-ame is a traditional candy with a cylinder shape that has boy’s face in it)*

Names like SML, like Victory Stand, like Traffic Lights. And just like the girl in front of him, names like staircases and a lot more. The girls themselves, doesn’t mind although they know that they were being called such things, but he now started to think twice if that was fine as it is.

“Ah!.....”

Suddenly, Taiyou noticed something and looked away.

“What’s the problem? You got mad because your harem got insulted?”

“No, it’s just that. Uhm..... your..... I could see inside your skirt”

He assumed that an awkward situation would arise from this, but opposite to that, rather than minding it she laughed pleasantly.

“I’m sorry ’bout that, showing something weird. But don’t worry, it’s leggings not panties inside, so there’s no problem. Ah!, are you the type that like those? That’s why you looked away huh”

“What, no no”

To the girl's confession he almost imagined the insides of her skirt, but shook his head hurriedly and chased that thought from his head. That kind of "thing" should be disciplined, to avoid a blunder in public, there was the risk that he might have to use the forbidden move.

"Oh. panicking with things like this, you're quite innocent even though you have a harem, aren't you"

"No, I don't think I'm that innocent but..."

"Ahaha, don't be shy don't be shy"

She laughed pleasantly, but Taiyou thought that it's really not like that. Rather, it was the opposite. The three sisters and Kohaku, because he tasted the girls beyond the "line", he started reacting to "things like that" recently.

That's why he's not as pure hearted like she said, on the contrary he was in heat. But because she liked Taiyou's reaction that much, after laughing for a while, she introduced herself to Taiyou with a positive tone.

"I'm Aoyama Akiha. Written as autumn breeze you read it as Akiha, it's a flashy name but it's just that my Pops is a Kanji maniac so don't mind those things" (TR: 秋(aki) の 波(ha)=Autumn Breeze, in Japan names that use difficult letters or weird naming sense are called KiraKira(flashy) names)

"Y,Yeah. I'm Natsuno Taiyou. Nice to meet you"

"Summer's sun huh, I'm the autumn's breeze so we're the same huh" (TR: Taiyou's name is written as" 夏(natsu=summer)" "の(no)" " 太陽(taiyou=sun")

"Yeah, you're right I guess"

"Hey, by the way, are you free right now?"

"What?"

"If you're free, hang out with me"

She said, without waiting for a reply went through the window panels, placing her foot

to the school building's ledge, like she became spider-man, she walked like it was flat ground.

“Wa,Wait a minute”

Taiyou panics, and went after her while looking up from the first floor. Her fluttering skirt teased the contents of what was inside of it, in any case she was walking along the outside wall and he could not leave her in such a precarious situation.

Akiha turned to the outer side of the school building, going to the wall side that has no windows. “Here I come!” she said, and this time she changes directions and climbed upwards.

“Are you a rock climber.....”

To her movement, Taiyou's eyes popped. If you look carefully, she used the ledges skillfully, like Taiyou whispered, as if a rock climber, or something like bouldering, she climbs up the outer wall.

There wasn't a strange phenomenon..... there was nothing strange happening like that of Taiyou or Shirokiyami, but without using safety lines, and doing that feat with ease, it was a skill that was enough to pop Taiyou's eyes because it was the first time that he'd seen something like that.

She reached fourth floor, which means she climbed up to the school building's top floor, sat on a ledge there, and called.

“Look, you should come too. You can do it right”

To Akiha's invitation, Taiyou thought for a while, and conceded. She seemed like she was used to it so there wasn't any problem, but in any chance that something happens. To prepare for the time that “something” happens, it's better if he was next to her side he thought.

That, he decided, but he had no wall-climbing skills to speak of. So, he started to climb the water pipe with brute force like climbing a monkey bar, then slowly went towards where Akiha is, and took a seat beside her.

As soon as he sat, wind blew. Taiyou who was not yet used to it, wobbled for an instant,



and panicked.

“Ahaha, feels good right. I, like this kind of wind”

“Don’t you mean, the wind here”

“The wind here is good too, but I like winds on high places. Maybe it’s because I’m stupid” (TR: *there’s a saying in Japan 馬鹿と煙は高いところのぼる which literally means stupid people and smoke rises to high places, smart people doesn’t climb to high places cause it’s dangerous so those who do are stupid, smoke doesn’t need to be explained*)

“Drunk people say they’re not drunk though”

“Yes? What does that mean”

“No, It’s nothing”

Taiyou answered in phrases, as if he was talking to Sakura or Kohaku, but Akiha did not understand what he meant. He wondered what type of person she was. What came to mind was that she was the exact opposite of the uptight Yurikago.

“Why are you saying that it means nothing? That saying must have some kind meaning right. If you said it once, explain it until the end properly”

“No, explaining the story is—” (TR: *explaining a story/joke that wasn’t get is torture,*)

“T~e~a~c~h~m~e~”

When Taiyou was reluctant to explain, Akiha shook her body like a spoiled child. Considering that she was at least 20 meters off the ground, swaying her body like that made Taiyou flinch...

“I got it, I got it so stop shaking”

“Then, teach me”

“Fuu..... You’re scary you know. I understand, so put away that hand!! It’s not a special story, it’s just like drunk people saying that they’re not drunk, a real stupid person

doesn't call themselves stupid, I just meant that"

"What, You were praising me. Well! Thanks"

Akiha made a wholehearted, dazzling smile. Taiyou was forced on explaining a story that wasn't get, one of the three most embarrassing thing in this world, but seeing her smile, he thought that it was worth it.

But, there was a side effect. These days, Taiyou's lower half was prone to 'excitement'—and he felt like his groins were going to engorge with blood.

That was how bad the situation was for him right now, in order to stop that, Taiyou shook his body left and right.

"What are you doing?"

"I'm trying to shrink it"

"What?"

".....My internal organs"

To Akiha who was doubtful, Taiyou replied a lie that is in some way the truth. After shaking like that for a few times, a feeling that his feet cringes went up, with that, the sensation that he felt in his groin subsided as well.

"Hey, rather than that, can I ask you something?"

"Sure, I mean I wouldn't come here if it wasn't alright"

"I see, well that's true. Then I'll ask you without reserve, why did you make something like a harem?"

"You really not holding back huh"

Taiyou thought for a second, and answered.

"Because of certain developments, I guess"

"Eh? It was because of certain events? "

“Yeah, it was out of certain circumstances”

“So it wasn’t because you liked or fell in love with each other?”

“Right now, there is a dam full of..... Well let’s just say that right now, my relationship with them does have love and affection”

He might be asked to explain again if he continued with his dam analogy, so Taiyou changed his words.

“At the present time? Then in the beginning you got together even though, you didn’t particularly like each other? “

“Well, that’s how it was”

Taiyou nodded. Although it did not start with love and was more like an arranged marriage type of setting, he didn’t think that this was a bad thing, that’s because—.

“Even if it’s not like that from the start though, after being in love, I just need to love them for the rest of my life, right?”

“Hmm, no, I get that but. I guess that’s fine but..... well”

“What, do you have any problem?”

“No, I don’t have any problems with you, but I do have a problem”

“What is the problem?”

“Well it’s not my problem to be exact..... But, A friend of mine, has that kind of household..... She was born from a family that has a harem and she’s really troubled. That’s why I’m asking you a lot of things, I want to be of help to her and possible find some points for reference”

Akiha said, it’s the first time she made a troubled face since he met her, she continued.

“It’s about Aoba, she’s the girl that you saved a little earlier”

Once again, the wind blows through the two people.





「アーレム持ちなのと  
純情なんだな」

あお 秋波 あき 波  
青山秋波

なつ の たい よう  
夏野太陽

I BECAME A LIVING CHEAT

LIGHTNOVELSTRANSLATIONS.COM

## CHAPTER 62

### SURPRISE!

---

“I feel like Aoba-san and your stories a little bit different from each other so it may not be that useful as reference though”

“Wait, by Aoba, do you mean Miyagi-san?”

“Yeah”

With a facial expression that is between bitter and happy, Akiha answered.

“Miyagi-san’s house is the same as mine..... Then, the mother she called “Mama” is.....?”

““Mama” is Atsuko-san, mother is Miho-san, and in case you are wondering, her ‘Mommy’ is Nazuna-san”

When Akiha gave that immediate response, Taiyou finally had a surprised face. Knowing that somehow listening to Aoba’s mutterings is possibly the correct thing to do, that is surprising.

“Then, this Nazuna-san is her real mother?”

Three women, each called with various different names.

If the father is “Dad”, then Taiyou guessed that it would have been obvious for the real mother to be “Mom”. In order to confirm his guess, he tried to throw out his question to her, but she made an even stranger face.

“Well, that’s not entirely correct”

“Then is her birth mother Atsuko-san? Or is it Miho-san?”

“That is.....”

After Akiha thought for a bit, her facial expression returned to the cheerful face that

resembled the one when he first met her.

“I can’t say myself. She is a friend, but it is a matter of another person’s family circumstances. It’s probably reasonable to hear it from the actual person.”

“I see, it’s like that”

With a slight nod, Taiyou was satisfied what Akiha said.

“With that being said”

“Eh?”

“I want to hear more about your side of the story”

Akiha winked and asked while being flirty. Just like how Akiha’s name represents her body, that figure was plenty cute, even though it did surprise Taiyou.

“The actual person?”

“Yup, the story about y~o~u~r harem. Let me hear more about it”

“I thought it wasn’t enough to be a reference?”

“Yes, because it isn’t a good-reference-story, now it’s just pure curiosity”

“Curiosity!”

“Even though I look this way, I am actually quite tight-lipped”

“A person who is really strict can’t call themselves strict”

“Ah, you said that before Then, even though I look this way, I am actually quite tight-lipped”

“Conversely saying again is not the issue!? Anyways, you have already showed enough about that”

“Ah, mean~ie”

As Akiha was saying that, she giggled.

“Isn’t it fine~, teach me~”

“Wa, wait a moment, don’t shake me, it’s dangerous!”

Taiyou was being shaken by Akiha. The thing hanging between his legs was once again in a crisis! and he froze in place.

“It’s alright, even if you fall you won’t necessarily die”

“I don’t need that kind of magical expression!” (*Note: What Taiyou is saying is like “Don’t jinx me”*)

“Heey, about various things, t~e~a~c~h, m~e”

“I got it, I got it, so please move away from me a bit”

“Eh, why?”

“.....It’s because each and every time you want something you are shaking my body and I can’t bear it”

Taiyou said that, but of course it was just an excuse to escape. During the time she shook him, the special fragrance of a girl came off of her and entered his nose, tickling his chest. To Taiyou now (*as it was mating season*), this was like poison.

Therefore, he needed to have some distance.

“Well, you know, there’s nothing wrong with just talking. Although I say that, what is good to talk about?”

“From when you guys met until separation”

“That kind of lion-like thing..... no, I can’t separate with them”

“Ohh”

Akiha made a surprised face.



“What’s wrong?”

“Right now, you spoke like a natural. Instead of saying, “I’m not going to separate” you said that you “can’t separate” “

“Uuu”

Taiyou was at a loss for words. He returned to that phrase unintentionally, but he himself used it with that kind of implication.

“Then, it’s alright if you don’t talk to me about “separation”, so let me hear stuff about your first encounters “

After Taiyou thought for a little bit, he carefully opened his mouth. Because there are numerous parts about the girls that he can’t talk about to a third party, he kept in mind not to carelessly make a slip of the tongue.

“Our encounter..... I really don’t remember, because we’re classmates, the first time was probably during our homeroom self-introductions. “Eh? There are quite the triplets here” is the extent of my impressions, I think”

“Ah, I got that too. Even though they clearly had the same face, their sizes were different, right? I wondered. It’s kind of like what people say, a real before-and-after thing where you see the steps of a girl’s growth—just like the Seven-Five-Three Festival!” *(Note, the Seven-Five-Three Festival is traditional rite of passage when children aged 3, 5, and 7 and they go to the shrine)*

Taiyou nodded, he understood that example (The Seven-Five-Three Festival).

“After a considerable long period..... I would say probably around a month, though. One night, as I was going home, I met them on the roadside, and there, I was confessed.”

“Confessed? From whom?”

“All of them”

Taiyou consciously replaced “three people”, and said “all of them”.

He himself thought, the relationship of the girls was that of one person, just like his ability “Idol” saw it. To the girls whose nature and heart beats synchronize, Taiyou had some kind of yearning to hug their figures.

“By “all of them”, do you mean all at once?”

“Yes”

“Wo~w”

With a nod in return, Akiha was taken aback, but at the same time, she obviously had a cheerful expression on. Looking at it, it wasn't the kind of face you get when you become uncomfortable, but rather the complete opposite.

After getting that much information, there's no way her intentions were to deny the fact and laugh at him. An expression conveyed to Taiyou that she had a genuine curiosity to the world that she didn't know.

That is why Taiyou thought it was fine to tell her. Thinking such and continuing to hide as much as possible about Blood Soul and Junishima, he talked just enough about the girls that he needed to convey his thoughts.

Hearing the story, Akiha suddenly made a face that looked like she just remembered a question.

“Then, among the three who do you like the most? Or as expected you love them all equally? “

“I love the three of them equally”

“Ohh”

Akiha leaned back, even more amazed. Looking at that and wondering if she would fall, he became worried, but she seemed like was used to doing such things in high places, and made no signs that she lost her balance or that she would fall.

“What is it this time?”

“Considering, what happened with the girls, can I assume that there is another girl in

your harem?”

“.....You’re very good at twisting someone’s words to your advantage, aren’t you?”

“Not at all. If that’s really the case, then you’re just too careless”

“If I’m being told such, I don’t really have any words to return”

Taiyou nodded, himself also believing exactly that.

“So, was I right?”

“You won’t tell other people about this?”

“I won’t say, my lips are sealed. See, I didn’t even talk to you about Aoba”

“Now that you mention it, that’s true. Well, I’m not particularly bothered even if you were to spread rumors so... Yeah, there’s another girl. Her name is Kohaku-san”

“Ohh, you used -san to address her, so she must be older than you?”

“Ah”

“An older woman, huh? Is it a female college student? OL? Or perhaps it’s m~a~r~i~e~d woman? “ (*Note: OL means office lady*)

“You have a very filthy way of talking, do you have a special plan for saying married woman?”

“Enough about me, more importantly what is it?”

“It’s none of them. Well, I would say she’s more like a house maid”

Kohaku’s figure came to mind. As an “Eternal Little”, the 87 year-old woman is needless to say neither a female college student nor an OL. Because it was the first time Taiyou thought about concerning married women, he thought this was different.

“I see, is that all of them?”

“For the moment”

“For the moment?”

“.....We can never predict human life and the future, right?”

Taiyou said that and hid the fact about his goal to create a harem of seven brides. Or about the building called “Taiyou Castle” given by Kohaku. There, he imagined the scene of living together with the seven girls.

The scene where the first wife, the three sisters, are the focus, and everyone lives together in harmony and happily.

“Ah, you’re grinning at something”

“Eh?”

“You were probably having wild delusions about something. Yup, that’s the face that says “In the future if I increase my harem more, I’m all smiles””

“Are you an ESPer?” *(Note: ESPer = someone who has supernatural powers such as telepathy and can read other people’s minds)*

“You’re easier to read than you think, and you should be~ more conscious~ about that”

Saying that, Akiha stood up while laughing.

“I think it’s about time I go?”

“Yeah, you listened to a large part of my story. Also, if we’re here, it seems dangerous”

“Didn’t I tell you that you were so easy to read? Until now, you were slouching the whole time, you know~?”

“Eh?”

Taiyou was surprised and dropped his line of sight in a panic. However —there was nothing special about it, it wasn’t like he had a bulge to signify an erection or something.

By the time that Taiyou thought that he was “tricked” by her, she was already skillfully

walking along the outer wall of the school and leaving him behind. Looking at the girl who was disappearing from sight, Taiyou also stood up to return.

“““Um, Taiyou-san”““

The familiar voices surprised Taiyou.

Raising his face up to where he heard the voices, he saw the figures of the three girls whose gaze was fixated on him from inside the roof fence. “Now that I think about it, they were headed towards the roof earlier” Taiyou remembered.

For some reason, the girl’s eyes were moist.

“You, you girls, since when have you been there?”

“““Since you told her that you loved us all equally!”““

Taiyou couldn’t avoid magnificently blushing.

## CHAPTER 63

# NOT ENOUGH SPEED

---

After darkness descended Oriyakata High School. *(TL: his school was previously called Orikan, but I think I got it wrong, and it should be Oriyakata)*

Even all the baseball club members that stayed at school to practice until sunset had already went home, and school grounds was currently very quiet.

Inside such a school, Taiyou remained in the classroom he usually went to. The light in the room wasn't even on, and all he was doing was lowering his chair and raising his chair on to the desk.

He took the seat at the very back which looked really cheap, and he turned the seat upside down, placed it on top of the table and then he carried the desk to the side of the wall.

After lowering the desk to the side of the wall, he would carry it back to its former place and then lower the chair.

Placing the chair on top; carrying the desk.

returning the desk; putting the chair down.

He was continuing to perform these actions.

Inside of this dark room, there was two figures staring at him. Kazane was seated a little bit away from where he was, and Hera was sitting on top of Kazane's shoulder like a small figurine.

The two girls were watching Taiyou.

"Is there... A meaning to doing this?"

Kazane was asking Hera.

"No, there isn't desuyo~ Taiyou-chan's experience points won't increase unless he

does pointless things like this desuyo~. But, it seems like Taiyou-chan may have been born in the wrong time period~”

“What do you mean?”

“Just a little while ago, this kind of thing was quite popular because in the past it did have meaning”

“Ah, I feel like I’m watching some kind of historical drama. In the past, everyone would carry the desk together and then clean up the room, is that right?”

“Yes~! Kazane-chan, have you ever needed to clean the school grounds?”

“Nope”

Kazane immediately replies. Ever since she was born, all the schools she attended never had a cleaning policy and she never had to clean the school grounds.

“That’s why. Along with the changes in the times, a lot of things change as well desuyo~”

“Is that how it is?”

Kazane nodded her head in understanding.

She was resting her chin by placing both of her hands on top of the desk and using it as a brace while intently watching Taiyou.

She was watching Taiyou with an entranced gaze, almost as if she was watching her idol figure or something.

It was slightly different to the look one would give to the person they loved.

On this day, Taiyou told her that he would be staying behind with Hera in order to increase his level, and she readily volunteered to stay behind together. Although he did tell her that “it wasn’t anything interesting to watch”, she still insisted on coming, and since it wasn’t really troubling if she watched him, along with the fact that he didn’t mind her company, he allowed her to stay behind with him.



“Taiyou-chan, has become really cool hasn’t he~?”

“Yes, he is very cool..... Ever since yesterday”

“Yes desu~. In the past he was really mute whenever he went out to level up, but now I can sense that he is so full of energy desu. his face from the side looks really determined and it looks like his sweat is shining”

“Hera-chan, do you like Taiyou-san?”

“Of course desuyo?”

Hera answered in a way as if stating “why would you ask such a thing?”

“I belong only to Taiyou-chan nanodesu”

“I suppose that’s true..... But, I wonder how Taiyou feels about you?”

“I also wonder ~”

The two girls were curiously watching Taiyou, but he was too immersed in his levelling up process and was working very hard.

“Phew, that was hard work”

Taiyou let down his chair and let out a breath, Kazane ran up towards him with the towel she prepared beforehand.

Taiyou took the towel and used it to wipe the sweat off his forehead.

“Taiyou-san, is it about time we return home? It seems like Kotone and Suzune are a little worried about us”

Kazane suggested the both of them return while looking at him with upturned eyes.

She was able to feel what the other two sisters were feeling with the telepathic connection they shared, and she told their feelings directly to Taiyou.

Taiyou thinks for a little while and asks Hera a question.

“Hera, my level has not increased yet?”

“It’s just a little bit more desu~”

“I’m sorry, I think it will take a little longer, so I plan on going a little bit more until I level up”

“I understand. it seems that you are really motivated today aren’t you?”

“Yeah, there’s a little something with my status”

Taiyou answers quite ambiguously. Kazane looked like she didn’t really understand what he just said, so he tried to explain it in a little more detail.

“The first time I felt how amazing levelling up can be to the human body is when..... My strength reached a value of 30. My level going up and my strength reaching 30... When I went up to the rooftop and turned the doorknob, the knob was completely broken off”

“Oh yeah, now that you mention it, it was replaced with a new one. Is that what happened? So Taiyou-san was the one who broke it...”

Kazane nods having remembered the new knob.

The three girls went up to the rooftop during lunch break so she indeed saw it.

“By the way, the time that I helped you girls for the first time, I was already able to break and split a concrete wall in half. Therefore, I think of 30 strength as a sort of border that I crossed”

“Yes.....”

Kazane’s cheeks turned vermillion and her eyes were filled with rapt attention. It seems that she was remembering the time Taiyou saved her and got a little emotional.

“Basing it on the number 30 as a borderline, can you please confirm my speed value?”

“Umm..... Ah, it’s at 29”

When Taiyou asked her, Kazane panicked and quickly confirmed the value of his speed.

“That’s right, if I increase it by one more value, it will reach 30. Although it’s half value of my strength, because it seems that 30 is a border for me, I started to wonder what would happen when it exceeded this value.....”

“I see, I understand”

Kazane nodded in comprehension.

As soon as she said this, she got up and started walking back to the seat she was sitting on moments ago, so as not to interfere with Taiyou’s levelling.

“Wait”

Suddenly Taiyou grasped her hand.

“Hyaah! T-Taiyou-sa——”

“Queit”

He brought up his index finger and pressed it against her small lips. As he did this, he stared towards the entrance of the classroom door.

In the next moment, Taiyou noticed something and pushed her down towards the floor. Moreover, Taiyou pinned her with his body as he hung on top of her.

“Taiyo——”

“Shh”

She was totally caught off guard, this time he used the palm of his hand to close her mouth.

Although she resisted for a while, considering their physical difference along with Taiyou’s superhuman strength, she couldn’t really do much.

Taiyou also lowered his posture towards the ground, and keenly stared at the classroom entrance. A short while later, footsteps were heard. At the same time a flashlight shone into the room.

It was the janitor making his rounds.

Taiyou held his breath all the way until the footsteps of the janitor got further away.

“fuuh.....”

Taiyou let out his breath feeling relieved.

The teacher was already mad at him for skipping school, if he was also found out when he stayed in school grounds until this late of a time..... He would without a doubt get an even harsher lecture and preaching from his teacher.

Moreover, he has had a variety of bad experiences with the neighbourhood policeman to the fact that he could remember the face of the policeman so he really wanted to avoid any more trouble if at all possible.

“My bad... It’s alright now...”

Saying that Taiyou stood up. He finally noticed something.

Inside of this dark room, he actually pushed a girl towards the floor and held her mouth closed with the palm of his hand.

Even if he wanted to make an excuse, it was without a doubt, a crime inducing scene, especially if it was witnessed by others.

If he was truly found out by the janitor moments ago, it wasn’t going to be as simple as getting a lecture from his teacher, it was probably going to be an instant red card and police would probably be involved.

“S, sorry”

Taiyou stood up rapidly and parted from Kazane.

She raised her body really slowly, and fixed the hem of her skirt with a flushing face.

That look on her face was exceedingly sexy and to the Taiyou right now, it was like poison.

“I’m sorry, I did something really strange”

“No, it’s alright. Ah, it seems that Koto-chan and Suzu-chan are both rooting for us

right now”

“I don’t think they need to cheer us on!?”

“Ah rere? Taiyou-chan aren’t you going to do it desuka~?”

“I’m not going to do it outside”

“Outside?”

“Isn’t it obvious? If her naked figure was seen by others, what do you think would happen?”

“Hmm, then you would either silence their mouths or you would do SATUGAI?”

“Isn’t that both the same thing?! Or more like I don’t want it to reach that stage so that’s why I’m not doing it!”

“Ohh, is that how it is desu~?”

“— ! ”

When Taiyou was rebuking Hera’s words, Kazane suddenly covered her face and ran out of the classroom.

“Kazane?”

“Look, because you wouldn’t do it to her, she got angry and went home desuyo~”

“No, that logic is definitely wrong!”

When he rebuked her even more, there was a vibration in his chest area. It wasn’t the phone that he sent out for repair, but was instead the phone that Kohaku lent him temporarily.

When he took it out to make sure who was calling, the screen displayed that the person was calling from “Taiyou’s Castle”.

When he answered the call, Kohaku’s voice could be heard.

[You, what happened over there?]

“Eh, even if you were to ask me..... Nothing much happened...”

Taiyou was quite startled but he decided to hide this fact for now.

[Is that so? It's just that Kotone and Suzune are grinning strangely]

“Grinning?”

Taiyou tilts his head to Kohaku's words, he didn't really know why the two girls would act like that.

For some reason or another, even Hera who was beside him was smirking.

# CHAPTER 64

## THE THIRD BRIDE/REFUGE

---

Night at the Taiyou's Castle

Taiyou had returned from school and was alone in the living room terrace with Kohaku. While sitting facing each other, he told her what happened in school. Seated in front of him was Kohaku wearing a T-shirt printed with Peace with a Heart, a skirt with lace fabric, and a thin hoodie over top. The overall look was coordinated with light blue color as casual look, and even though the base is children's clothes, it looked really good on her with her steady atmosphere. To Taiyou who was only used to seeing the opposite sex wearing school-uniforms, this was a very fresh look. Kohaku pulled her chin a little after listening to the end of Taiyou's story, she grinned and glimpsed towards the three sister's room.

"I got it now, that's why as soon as those girls came home, they closed up in their room jya"

"By the way, are they in their room right now?"

"Umu, Kotone and Suzune already closed up at the time I called your phone. They were grinning, but when they saw I was looking, they were embarrassed jyana. Well, after being pushed down by a man who was in heat at school, anybody would feel shy"

"In heat—!"

Taiyou was at a loss for words, the way Kohaku said it was too blunt.

"No no, I'm the one who wants to go hole up in my room. I'm the one who had a blunder"

"I agree jya"

Kohaku laughed, grinning. It was a smile that had a hidden meaning.

"Well, come tomorrow and they will be back to normal jya"



“.....I guess so”

Although doubtful, Taiyou agreed for now. After learning pieces of information, even if they're acting weird it's not to the point that he needed to worry about them. Most importantly, Kohaku said it's alright; if that was the case, then Taiyou decided to believe her.

“By the way, your level went up jyana”

“Yeah, I became level 11”

“Fumu.....”

Kohaku nodded, moves her gaze left and right, confirming Taiyou's abilities.

“Your abilities have gone up steadily jyana”

“Well that's true, but the crucial stats didn't go up”

“The crucial point?”

“Yeah, I wanted to make Speed go up, but it didn't go up in this level-up”

“Fumu, that one that is 29 jyana”

“Yeah”

Taiyou nodded, and told Kohaku what he had said to Kazane at the classroom earlier.

“I see, that's why you stayed longer today just to increase your level jyana”

“Yeah, I wanted it to be 30, but there's no helping it. The speed until now has normally gone up, though sometimes it didn't, and this was one of those times. Although, after doing these things it would probably go up in time on its own.”

“I agree jya..... by the way”

Kohaku said and changed the topic. In an instant, Taiyou felt a shiver through his back. Sitting facing him, Kohaku's leaned across the table as she stared at him with slanted eyes. Her face had the allure of both childlike innocence and an adulthood to it, it was

surprisingly sexy and arousing..... No, to Taiyou her facial expression was one that attempted to seduce him. His heart started beating so fast that it almost flew out of his throat.

“Ko,Kohaku-san.....”

“At noontime you were always with the girls right jya? Then, it should be my turn now”

“Tu,turn you say, what turn.....”

“Saying such tactless things, what an awful husband jya”

Kohaku whispers softly in his ear, and in an instant Taiyou’s rationality that worked throughout the day blew up as a whole but.....

——DingDong.

The doorbell rang with a classical sound, and the atmosphere that was developing until then was blown away.

“Mu!, Who is it at this time?”

As if she were disturbed at a good point, Kohaku’s atmosphere went back to normal in an instant, and she went towards the entrance with a sulky face. Taiyou who was left behind felt somehow saved, or maybe not, he felt subtly. Being completely seduced and carried by the flow hurts a man’s pride, but he also had such feelings of already being charmed by her. With those feelings riding on the balance, Taiyou eventually felt it was a shame for the interaction to be cut short. That’s why this time when she comes back to his side..... he thought he would be the one who will take the initiative, but...

“Husband, can you come here?”

Kohaku’s voice called out towards him from the entrance.

“What happened?” he thought, and stood up from the sofa and went towards the entrance. As soon as he got there, the unexpected surprise visitor made Taiyou’s eyes pop.

“Oh, Hallo～”

“.....Good evening”

The ones who came this late were: Akiha, who had a carefree smile and Aoba, who had a weird face.

“Please enter”

The three similar sisters that has already claimed the position of a housewife in this house, Kotone, Suzune and Kazane came out of their room after hearing the commotion, and quickly prepared tea and snacks for each person on the table. Sitting with the table between them was Taiyou, Akiha and Aoba, and after bringing out tea the three sisters moved like Kohaku; standing near the wall and looking at what was going to happen.

“Thanks..... Yup, it’s tasty. Go on Aoba you drink too”

“.....”

The tea that was brought out was very pleasing to Akiha and she recommended it to her friend that came with her. However, Aoba gripped her hands above her closed knees, and did not move as if she was enduring something. Taiyou thought that Aoba was weird, and while thinking that he looked at the three sisters. They were also wrinkling their eyebrows a little, but nodded back. The girl named Miyabi Aoba kept imposing on Taiyou every time until now, and also imposed on the three sisters, but for some reason, there was no hostility felt from her right now. Looking at the way she was until now, he can only think of this as weird. Something happened; it was natural for Taiyou to think that. He asked about what happened not to Aoba, but to Akiha instead.

“I’ll get straight to the point, can you let me hear why you girls came?”

“Sure, when we met at lunch time you know, you said that you were living in a place somewhat like an apartment right?”

“Yeah, I said that. That’s here”

“Yup it does look a little like an apartment doesn’t it? Wait, I think a dormitory fits it better though?”

“Correct, it’s been used in that manner in the past jya”

Butting in the conversation, Kohaku answered.

“You are?..... Ah, you said husband earlier, maybe”

Akiha had a face that she guessed something, as if to confirm that she asks.

“It’s nice to see you, I am the Azumiya Kohaku, also known as the second wife jya”

“I’m Aoyama Akiha, nice to meet you”

Akiha after introductions was like “Eh?” and looked at Taiyou as if she remembered something.

“You said in the lunchtime that she was an older woman right?”

“Yeah, I said that”

“And it is this person?”

“That’s right”

“.....Can you explain?”

Akiha’s reaction was normal; If he had to explain to her about the Eternally Little at this juncture, the conversation would never end. Therefore, Taiyou forcibly changed the topic.

“Rather than that, you wanted to know if I lived in this building? Why is that?”

“Yeah, uhmm, If there is a room open for staying, do you think you could lend us a room?”

“Fumu”

Taiyou wrinkled his eyebrows, and looked Aoba at the side. Aoba and Akiha, they looked like they have no baggage at all, but with Akiha with her usual atmosphere and changed into her casual clothes, and Aoba with her school uniform coming at such a time it is clear, even without putting into words, who was the one going that intended

to stay over.

“That’s right, I want you to let Aoba stay”

“I see”

Taiyou said, and looked toward Kohaku’s way.

“Why are you looking at me? I said it earlier, that I am giving you everything with this house jya. Husband should just do what he likes”

“Is that so?”

“Oh, what a splendid conversation!”

Akiha’s eyes sparkles. Literally, it felt as if she really thought that Taiyou and Kohaku’s conversation was interesting.

“.....”

Kohaku said that, but Taiyou still felt that she was giving him her permission.

Because he got permission, he once again thought about Aoba.

“There’s an open room, considering that you guys are my classmates and not actual strangers, I wouldn’t mind letting you stay over”

“That’s a roundabout way of speaking”

“Well this is provided that you girls give me an explanation for the situation”

Taiyou looked straight at the two girls as he said this.

“I guess you won’t be willing to accept me without hearing the situation, right?” (*Aoba*)

“Mmm, I guess that’s reasonable” (*Akiha*)

Akiha said that and looked at Aoba. Aoba was looking down as usual and wasn’t saying anything. Suddenly, Taiyou realized something. Her fists are tightly gripped on her lap, but something in her eyelashes was glimmering. She had the face of someone enduring

something. Taiyou made eye contact with Akiha, and Akiha urged Aoba to speak.

“Aoba, if you’re not going to say it, I will tell him in your stead you know?”

Akiha asked, but Aoba didn’t answer. Because of this Akiha let out a sigh and looked towards Taiyou. Just like she declared she would, Akiha began to explain the circumstances in Aoba’s stead.

“Actually, it seems that her..... Mothers are going to increase”

“.....Huh?”



**I BECAME A LIVING CHEAT**

LIGHTNOVELSTRANSLATIONS.COM



## CHAPTER 65

# THE THIRD BRIDE/FAMILY VISIT

---

The next day after school, Taiyou was riding the train with Akiha. The train was empty because it was before the rush hour, so they were able to take a seat beside each other while leaving a person's space between them. Across to the two of them, there was a young parent and child, the young child removes its shoes and climbs up the chair, and is watching what is outside the window intently. There, the train slides to a home stop, and an announcement flows inside the train car.

—Be careful of the opening home doors.

“Mommy, what is home door??”

“It's the door that opens on the platform's side. Look, that”

“He~, it's really a door right”

With the kid's line, Taiyou laughed a little. He do not know on what knowledge that it determines the correctness of a door, but that one line was straight to Taiyou's laugh spot.

That appearance of a child saying an innocent line was very lovely. Suddenly, he imagined that he would also someday, bring a child with him like that. But, he couldn't imagine it clearly.

“Hey~ how was Aoba yesterday?”

Akiha who was silent all the way the train ride, suddenly asked a question. The question didn't include the main part of the sentence and so Taiyou tilted his head and asked back.

“How was, what of her?”

“If she was quiet, or cute, or unexpectedly smells good, something like that”

“.....What exactly are you talking about?”

“Eh, I heard about that time when you sneaked into a woman’s bedroom in order to do a sneak attack you know?”

“I didn’t do that! I would never creep into a girls bedroom whilst she was asleep!”

“You didn’t? even though you have a harem and you are so lustful?”

“It’s not like I am lustful, rather if you think so lowly of me, are you sure you are fine leaving your best friend in a place like that?”

“Rather than saying that it’s fine, it’s more like giving her shock therapy”

Akiha said carelessly, it was the usual carefree expression, but those eyes looked unexpectedly serious.

“That girl’s problem is such a problem you know, if you did something to her, there was a chance that she would have a break through, that’s why. If it was a different guy it’s useless. It has to be you”

“It’s not like I don’t understand what you’re saying but...”

Aoba’s situation that he heard last night. It’s true that compared to other guys Taiyou might be the key on breaking through the situation. But that will have big risk that is hidden within it. A deadly poison or a miracle drug. That was Taiyou’s position in relation to Aoba.

“But, the chances of failing is too much higher right”

“I think so, it’s a chance like betting in 00 on a roulette”

“That’s almost surely to fail!”

“That’s alright, if that happens, it would be splendid as well”

“What’s so splendid in that?!”

Taiyou continuously made a loud voice, his voice was cracking a little.

Is the girl in front of him really Aoba's best friend? it was becoming doubtful, if Akiha was really worried about her friends wellbeing.

"But right, if you didn't to attack her in her sleep, you haven't heard from Aoba anything at all then"

"Yeah, after you went home she immediately closed up in her room, she also went to school quickly. That's why, I still don't know about anything"

"Asides from you, what about your brides?"

"You really pick at every nook and corner don't you?..... No, they might have heard her story, But even so, I haven't asked anything from the girls"

"I see, if that is so, I should probably explain it huh"

"Weren't you saying you won't tell other people's secrets"

"The situation is different from then, after getting you involved, not saying anything will be unfair right. You are at the very least 60% involved you know?"

"What's with those numbers?..... Well, in any case, if you are going to explain then that would help me"

"Then..... I'll just state the most essential part"

Is there something that Akiha would think twice of saying, the usually unreserved her cleared her throat, and once again, started talking.

"The thing with Aoba is that—she didn't know who her real birth mother is"

"Are you telling me that her birth mother died in child birth? "

"That's not what I meant, I meant that growing up she only knew that she had three mothers and that one of them was her birth mother"

".....Wait a second, let me organize this once"

Taiyou put a hand in his forehead, and raised forward his other hand. His head was on confusion immediately.

“Her household has an unusual family composition”

Because being they were in an open place like a train, Taiyou said, changing his words.

“And in regards to this complicated family situation, she herself doesn’t know too much about it herself, am I getting this right?”

“Yup, it looks like she wasn’t told on purpose. When she was a child she loved all of them equally calling them all Mommy, but recently, she was being conscious of who was the real birth mother”

“Well, I guess I can understand it. How did this all happen?”

“I don’t know, but isn’t it fantastical somehow?”

“What part?!”

Taiyou raised his voice, his voice after all, was cracking a little bit. Once again, he organizes the situation he heard in his head There is four adults in Aoba’s house, one man, and three women that are the man’s wife or mistress, that kind of construction. And being born there, although Aoba became first year at high school, she wasn’t told who her birth mother is.

“Well with that, she would treat me harshly for sure huh”

Taiyou remembered the times that she was imposing on him. If she were born in such family, despising some reason like “affair” (*in Aoba’s criteria*), would be a very natural flow.

“On top of that.....”

Taiyou said, and looked at Akiha.

“Yup, this time around, it seems like she’s going to get a fourth mother, don’t you think that’s lovely?”

“No can you please cut it out with that it’s “lovely” thing. By the way, what kind of person is the fourth mother?..... Don’t tell me that it’s you?”

“That would be even more lovely!”

She twinkles her eyes. The terrible part, was that her eyes were really thinking that's nice, literally.

“Unfortunately that's wrong. That person is Aomori Chitose, 17 years old”

“Yes?”

“JK!” (TR: JK=joshikousei/highschool student slang)

The thumbs up she made was blinding..... In fact, he really feels like he's going to have a headache.

“.....You serious?”

Taiyou holds his hand over his temple. And his mind was about to flow into a place that no human mind should transverse.



“It is crude tea, but, please”

The Aoba's house they've arrived at, was something that can be called a little mansion-like building. Inside the exclusive residential area, about at least thirty meters vertically and horizontal breadth of grounds, there stands a western style house.

It was a structure that can make you feel its history. Taiyou and Akiha was guided to the building's reception room-like place, and there, a maid brought out tea. It was a little strange but she had elegant gestures and calm way of talking, that made woman feel a graceful atmosphere within her.

“Thank you, Miho-san”

Taiyou felt something somehow, with Akiha's words. And that wasn't completely unrelated..... to the two women sitting in front of him. If you include the maid they would be “three” of them though.

“Please excuse me, can I know your name?”

“I’m Atsuko, Fukushima Atsuko. Nice to meet you”

“I am called Yamagata Nazuna”

Towards Taiyou, the two women named themselves. Atsuko who was wearing a celebrity-like clothes has a high pitched voice, and compared to that, Nazuna was wearing a casual wear.

He was looking at the two, and Miho who was wearing a classic style maid clothes alternately.

Yesterday, Taiyou heard from Akiha the three woman’s name. Respectively, Junko, Nazuna, and Miho. That means that the woman who was wearing maid clothes has the possibility of being Aoba’s mother, he thought.

“And then, your name is? Are you only making us say our names?”

To Atsuko’s question, Taiyou named himself in a hurry, because he forgot to do it.

“I’m sorry, I am called Natsuno Taiyou. I am a classmate of Miyabi-san”

“Is that so. It seems like Aoba-chan had made trouble for you, I am sorry for that”

“No, that’s alright”

While saying that, Taiyou looked at Akiha. “Did you tell them?” with that kind of question in his sight.

“I didn’t tell them anything”

“I am very sorry, we made the investigation on our own”

Miho who was the only one standing in the room explained.

“Because she is master’s important daughter, we didn’t want anything dangerous to happen to her” (*Maid Miho*)

“Is that so?”

“Uhm..... So, how is, Aoba-chan?” (*Nazuna*)

In a different way from Miho, Nazuna asked with a timid way of talking. This time was a worried way of asking about their daughter's condition.

“Uhhh.....”

“You can say it frankly, you must have heard something about the story right”

Atsuko said that with frank tone.

“If that's okay then..... Well, for the mean time she went school. She seems down compared to normal though”

He said that while remembering her who didn't impose at him at all today, although sleeping under the same roof.

“Is that so, I am relieved”

“But, why did she go to your place? Are you in a good relationship usually?”

“No, It's not like.....”

“Atsuko-san, Atsuko-san”

Akiha invited her while she leaned over, and whispered to Atsuko who also was leaning over.

And then, Atsuko's expression was became of that when one's having fun.

(Ah! These two are of the same type women)

Taiyou realized that in an instance. At the same time, he had a bad feeling.

“He~, you are also doing “that” huh” (*Atsuko*)

“Uh!!” (*Taiyou*)

“What do you mean by “that”?” (*Nazuna*)

“It means, the same with our household, Nazuna-sama” (*Miho*)



To Nazuna who was the only one who doesn't seem to get it, Miho explained in a calm tone.

The situation is becoming awfully strange, Taiyou became vigilant.

## CHAPTER 66

# THE THIRD BRIDE / IT'S HARDLY ACCEPTABLE

---

“Oh.....”

“Is that so, he’s just like us? If it’s like this, don’t we have to teach him various things as his senpai in the path? Our relationship is one of deep love with each other, so I think it would be the best reference. The kids don’t seem to understand though”

“Hah, Haaa.....”

Atsuko spoke quite indifferently.

There wasn’t any malice in her voice but, Taiyou felt an uncomfortable feeling.

“It is an unavoidable thing Atsuko-sama. This kind of thing happens quite often during puberty”

“Ahh, is it at that age? At this age they are very hard to please aren’t they? I can vaguely remember that period in my life as well”

“I don’t think we have a choice..... Other than waiting for time to pass to resolve it”

The three women were talking amongst each other. Looking at the three women conversing like this, his sense of uncomfortableness changed to a whole new level.

A jovial woman, a quiet woman and a polite woman.

Without a doubt the three women in front of him were very different from each other, but there was one point in common.

They gave priority to their own relationships and the child was secondary. Seeing these things, Taiyou could not help but to inquire about something he was curious about.

“Excuse me”

Making a polite remark, the three women concentrated their gazes at him and he began to ask.

“Out of you three, is Miyagi-san’s birth mother amongst you?”

“All of us considers ourselves to be her true mothers, and all of us love her. But, I don’t think that’s the question you want to ask is it?”

“You’re asking about the..... birth mother?”

“I’m sorry but, who did you hear this from?”

“Ah, it was me who told him”

Akiha raised her hands like a primary school child and came forward with a carefree expression.

“Is that so.....?”

“There, there, Miho-san, you don’t have to make such a scary face. The things that Akiha-chan has told him are things..... that Aoba-chan has given permission for her to say”

“I also think the same. Besides, I think that Akiha-chan is a sensible and clever girl”

“I am sorry, Akiha-sama”

“Ah, you don’t have to worry about it”

Miho bows her head deeply and apologizes to Akiha. Miho was older than Akiha by at least a 12 year period and she was acting overly polite but Akiha already seemed to be used to it and wasn’t really surprised.

“Well, to answer your question, the answer would be..... YES”

“Amongst us three, one is the birth mother”

“.....”

Atsuko and Nazuna spoke, while Miho was just silently agreeing.

“Can’t you just tell her which of you is the real birth mother?”

“We can’t”

Although her tone of voice didn’t change, the look in Atsuko’s eyes and her atmosphere changed.

“Even we have our own circumstances. For someone like you..... Who is still inexperienced, there is no way you would be able to comprehend our situation. Because of this, there are things that we cannot say”

“Alright, I get it”

When Taiyou nods, Atsuko seems to have lost her momentum, and the other two were slightly surprised.

“Natsuno-kun, do you really understand?”

“Yes. I don’t understand your objectives, but I do understand that in order for you to achieve those objectives, one of the things you need to do is to not tell Miyagi-san about who her birth mother is. And the fact that you are taking such an extreme measure, probably means that you have tried everything else and there is no other method. That is my conclusion”

“You are interesting, aren’t you?”

“However, I do not approve”

Completely disregarding Atsuko’s previous words of praise, Taiyou suddenly stood up. Just like that, he looked at the three women and gave them a defiant look.

“Doing something like that to your own daughter, is not something that I can approve..... Excuse me”

Taiyou gave them a deep bow, he left Akiha who had been standing there silent and departed.

“Taiyou-chan”

After turning the door knob, Atsuko called out to him. When he turned around, she was looking at Taiyou with a smile on her face.

“As your senpai in these types of matters, allow me to give you a little bit of advice”

“.....What might it be?”

“You need power, if you want to be able to properly protect several women, then you need the strength to do so. Every single time you increase the number of women you love and need to protect, you need double the amount of power you possess, please act with that in mind”

“.....I intend to have power. If that’s all, then”

Once again, this time as a formality of thanks, he bowed his head and left the Miyagi Mansion.

“Haaah.....”

Taiyou let out a deep sigh after going out of the house. He wanted to let out all the stagnant feelings he had accumulated in his chest. Before he knew it, he acted like he was picking a fight.

Like he said to Atsuko, he could understand their choice in the matter. Taiyou understood the concept of doing whatever it took to achieve an objective, and taking an extreme measure and the final measure in this case was basically the same thing to him.

From an ordinary point of view, the relations between their family was strange, and they were taking an extreme means.

“It would make more sense if they were crazy...”

Once again Taiyou sighed. When he looked at the three women their faces were very composed and they were speaking rationally. It was definitely not the eyes of some frenzied hedonist person.

In other words, they completely understood their choices but still did it anyways, and Taiyou couldn’t stand for it.

He remembered the child he saw in the train.

It was a very young and innocent child talking to his mother, even for Aoba, there was a stage in her life where she enjoyed such simple conversations, this is what he heard from Akiha. But even then, Aoba was currently in a complicated domestic environment.

And the other thing was the words “senpai” that came out of Atsuko’s mouth.

They were his senpai in terms of being in a harem, and soon they were planning on adding a fourth mother to the mix. This was causing friction between the relationship between Aoba and her parents.

It was at this point that Taiyou felt like he was seeing the possibility that his own future was like this. He turned to look at the Miyagi Mansion one more time before walking towards the train station.

Taiyou thought that he wanted to solve the problem that Aoba was in right now.

He would definitely help her out, in fact he wanted to shout that he would make it happen. When he went to Miyagi’s house, he saw a semblance of what his future could become.

Therefore, he really wanted to be able to help Aoba.

Aoba’s present condition is basically caused because her parents were doing whatever they wanted, and the one who payed for it was the child.

This was the thing that he could not permit. To Taiyou, this was one of the things he hated the most in this world.

Therefore, Taiyou wanted to become Aoba’s strength, and change her current situation..... At the very least he wanted her to stop suffering.

—No matter what happens.

Taiyou quietly swore an oath to himself.

“But in saying this, what am I supposed to do?”

While riding his train and returning to St Hanazono Town, he couldn't think of any brilliant ideas in his mind.

He had the strong resolve and desire to help Aoba, however, he didn't have any concrete ideas or plans on how he could make this happen.

"Shall I confide with Kohaku-san?"

Getting off the train and into the platform, Taiyou mutters to himself. He thought that at these kinds of times, it was better to ask an experienced person.

For the time being, he took out the smartphone that he was borrowing from Kohaku in order to contact her, and it was at this time that...

"Taiyou-chan, Taiyou-chan"

Suddenly the Fairy Hera appeared out of nowhere.

Recently, the amount of times she left Taiyou's side has been increasing. This happened at approximately the same time he kissed Kohaku and increased the amount of girls that could see her figure.

It is likely that Hera enjoys the other girls company and so she wants them to be her conversation partner. Well there was no obligation on his part to prevent her from doing what she liked and so he just let her be. Because of this, she wasn't there when he went to Miyagi's house but he didn't really pay mind to it.

"What's up, I was just about to return home--"

Just when he was about to ask if the triplet sisters were hanging out with Kohaku, Hera had a panicked expression on her face.

"It's bad desu Taiyou-chan, you need to come quickly desu"

"What's wrong?"

Taiyou's face became stiff.

"She's been attacked desu, I have been looking all over for Taiyou-chan desu"

“What? Where is she?!”

Taiyou complexion changed for the worse and he requested that Hera guided him to her location.

The fact that Hera is asking for help probably means that one of the two, either the triplets or Kohaku are in danger. Out of these two girls, one of them were being assaulted?

The girls who had an intimate relationship with.

Taiyou quickly ran down the platform and exited the train station with Hera’s guidance. Just like that he ran straight into the shopping district toward a secluded alley. He saw a large amount of people gathered here. To be precise he saw a bunch of lowlife thugs surrounding somebody in this alley. Clearly something was wrong with the situation.

Taiyou clenches his fists and was going to make the first move, but the person who was surrounded by these men was in fact the twin tailed girl, Junishima Yurikago.



# CHAPTER 67

## THE THIRD BRIDE/ THE THIRD GIRL

---

The fight was finished in the blink of an eye.

Seeing those thugs reach their hands out towards Yurikago in a distasteful way, Taiyou leaped into the fray and literally wiped the floor with at least ten men who was surrounding her; it was instant kill.

The only weapon in Taiyou's arsenal was his fists, in comparison his opponents held knives and batons in their hands but he had the overwhelming strength to overpower them.

Not only that Taiyou snatched the baton off one of the guys and bent the whole baton right in front of them, and this added an element of mental damage to their mind.

If an outsider were to look upon this scene right now, they wouldn't see a fight..... It was a one-sided massacre.

At the very least, this is what Junishima Yurikago was seeing in front of her.

After making a heap of corpses pile behind him in less than one minute, he briskly turned to face Yurikago.

"Are you alright?"

She was quite calm, even though she was in this kind of situation, under the light of the moonlight, her face was cold and collected.

"Nastuno Taiyou"

"Hera-chan is also here ya know~?"

Yurikago murmurs Taiyou's name. Somehow as soon as Hera showed up, Yurikago's face blushes grandly.

Taiyou was wondering why she was acting like this, but he soon understood.

She was able to see Hera. This is because Kohaku made her forcibly kiss Taiyou. He guessed that she remembered that event and that's why she was acting like this.

Though he understood it, he thought it would be better if he didn't touch that topic. He turned towards Hera and wanted her to fly away so that Yurikago wouldn't feel embarrassed.

"Hera, can please you go back first?"

"Yes nanodesu~"

Hera obediently listened to Taiyou request without any complaints. Unlike the time where she seemingly appeared in front of him via teleportation, this time around Hera flapped her wings and flew into the evening sky.

After watching Hera depart he faced Yurikago once again and asked if she was alright.

"Yeah, I'm fine, it's not like they were able to do anything"

After Hera left, Yurikago's blush also disappeared.

(She's really cute)

"Well... I wasn't planning on letting these types of guys do something to me"

"Naturally, there isn't any girl who would want something like that to happen to her..."

As he was talking, Taiyou remembered a certain thing. Looking at the expression on her face, Taiyou had a bit of a doubt.

"By the way, just as an off-chance..... but what if they did something to you? What if I didn't make it here in time?—"

"self-destruction"

"Isn't that way too exaggerated?!"

Last time they were working together, she also said that in the case of an emergency she would rather die than get caught.

After remembering this fact, Taiyou started to wonder if she was the type of person to use 'suicide' as her back up plan... he honestly thought that her way of thinking was far more extreme than when he first imagined.

"You think? Well don't you think it would be irritating if I just let them do as they pleased? Dying in vain is also something I'd rather avoid, in that case my only option is to self-destruct isn't it? "

"No, let's not talk about the subject of death. Why is it that you have such a cute face but your views are so extreme I wonder?"

"Cute?"

Yurikago laughed scornfully.

"Are you referring to this face of mine? The last time we met, I was wearing a masquerade mask wasn't I?"

"Yeah, now that I think about it, something like that did happen between us"

After saying this, Taiyou took a long hard look at her face. Although it was a dark alley in the middle of the night, they were standing quite close to each other and he was observing her face closely. And just like that, he asked the question he had on his mind.

"Although I thought about this before, I've always wondered how you looked underneath the disguise. I mean—"

"You are way too close!"

He was looking at her too intently as he drew near towards her, Yurikago reacted by suddenly thrusting out her palm.

Taiyou was in a totally defenceless position and his jaw was hit with the palm of her hand! The sound of impact resounded.

Immediately his vision twinkled. His jaw was aching and he held on to it as he protested to her.

"What are you doing?! When people are speaking, don't just suddenly strike them in

the chin! What if I accidentally bit my tongue?”

“It’s cause your face is too close, don’t you agree?”

“No, well I mean that may be true but still! I just wanted to confirm how much you disguised yourself!”

“That’s totally unnecessary, a disguise is just a disguise. it’s obviously different from my real face!”

Did she perhaps get angry? her cheeks were red as she blurted out the words.

“In that case let me see the proof”

“The proof?”

“Yeah, do you have a picture of your real face or something? Even if it’s blurry it’s fine”

“A-as if I’d show you a picture like that”

“Why not?”

“What does it matter?!”

Continuing in this manner she seemed to have remembered something else.

“ah, my real face is a guarded secret! As a person who will become the next master of the Junishima family, it won’t do if my face is exposed to the public”

“That’s a little exaggerated don’t you think?”

“This is not exaggerated at all, my great-grandmother died from being assassinated”

“Eh...? is that for real?”

Taiyou’s eyes were bewildered. He thought that she was surely just being way too exaggerated, but unexpectedly there was some truth in the matter and this surprised him.

“It’s true, my 25th great-grandmother was poisoned to her death”

“What a minute! what exactly do you mean by saying your 25th great-grandmother?!”

“It’s because my great-grandfather had 49 concubines”

“What period are we talking about here?!”

“This was in the 19th century of the Meiji era, what? you got a problem with that?”

“.....Sorry, I don’t”

Taiyou was going to go into a debate with her, but after hearing about that he decided to tone it down. After all, Yurikago’s story was of the Meiji era and it was a period of time that was at least a century ago.

In that time period, Taiyou could agree that a man of power having plenty of concubines was an acceptable thing.

After toning it down and reaching a point where they could settle down, the both of them walked side-by-side out of the alley way and left the ruffians moaning and groaning on the floor.

She was somewhat leading the way as they walked in the direction of Taiyou Castle. Taiyou didn’t have a problem with this. Considering this was Yurikago, it wouldn’t be strange if she knew that he moved from his old place to this new place. While walking she voluntarily started talking again.

“I mean, even if I disregarded the story about my great-grandmother, there is another reason why I can’t show my face to another man”

“To men?”

“That’s right, for a man who sees my real face, I either need to kill them or marry them”

“What are you? some kind of a saint.....?”

Taiyou stared at her in wonder.

“Does that sort of custom still remain even now?”

“That’s just the kind of household I live in”

“Hmm, wait a minute? Then are you telling me that you always have some sort of a getup whenever you go out? Otherwise you wouldn’t be able to meet with anybody right?”

“Have you ever watched any historical dramas? For example, do you know something called the inner harem chambers?”

“Hm? I guess I know a little bit”

Where is she going with this? As he was thinking these thoughts, he was waiting for her to elaborate.

“In that case you can imagine it right? For instance, when you enter the room of the legal wife of the shogun, or meet with an important woman in that era, you would normally have bamboo blinds that covers the room, right?”

“Well, I do remember something like that..... but don’t tell me?”

“It’s exactly as you thought. I also usually meet people in that kind of setting, where I am behind a bamboo blind”

“Are you saying people need to be granted an audience just to meet with you?!”

“Is that what you got out of it?”

Yurikago raised her voice.

“Ah, it’s because those words were too shocking”

“After all, aren’t you underestimating me too much?”

“No no no, this isn’t about whether I am underestimating you or not, it’s just that in the 21th century Japan we currently live in I just don’t hear the words ‘audience’ used in normal conversation, that’s all”

“.....Well, I guess you might be right”

“Even so, you really are an amazing person aren’t you?”

“Isn’t that what I’ve been telling you? Why don’t you show a little more respect around

me?”

“Umm.....”

Taiyou made a difficult expression on his face and as he looked at Yurikago. Although she told him to show a little more respect, for some reason Taiyou just didn’t feel like it was appropriate for him to do so.

If the person in front of him was Kohaku, then it might be that he could show her respect.

After all, as part of the eternally little, her true age was quite advanced, and the words she spoke, the subject along with her facial expressions indicated that on a whole she had this really mature atmosphere around her.

Or possibly, if this was Shirokiyami, it may have been easier for him to show respect and honour. She possesses a fairytale-like beauty and she boasts an overwhelming aura and is told to be one of the strongest girls in the world. And that strength is something that is worthy of reverence.

And although her personality isn’t perfect, but even Sakura might be a target worthy of respect. She wore a tight pantsuit, and she had this adult like sex appeal and is accompanied by many subordinates so it wouldn’t be strange if she was respected as an adult woman.

However, the girl in front of him known as Yurikago didn’t really inspire any particular feeling. On the contrary—

“Just a little”

“Hyan! Wait, why are you pulling my hair?”

Yurikago stops walking and protested. Taiyou suddenly grabbed on to her long and slender twin-tail hair like he was pulling a prank on her.

It was only a light pull but because she was already advancing forwards the tug on her hair caused her neck to get pulled backwards.

## CHAPTER 68

# THE THIRD BRIDE/ HER TRUE SELF IS?

---

“Ah, No, I mean I just felt like it was appropriate”

“Appropriate?”

“Yeah, it’s because that place is quite easy to pull on so. It’s that kind of thing, you know when a cat just suddenly pounces on a ball of yarn. It was just a reflex. I’m sorry, I won’t do it again”

“.....Geez”

Yurikago had a sullen face and all the while, Taiyou bowed his head in apology and she seemed to accept it, once again she began to turn around and walk away.

“Just a minute”

“Haguu! Heyy!”

The moment she was about to walk away Yurikago was once again stopped and she hurled her protesting gaze back at Taiyou.

“What do you think you are doing!?”

“Sorry, sorry, I forgot to release my hand”

“We already parted! Or more like, why are you speaking in that tone of voice again!?”

“You must of misheard”

Taiyou spoke with a straight face.

“But don’t worry, this time we are really separated, look”

Taiyou lifted both hands in the air giving a surrender pose as he declared that he won’t do it anymore. Seeing this, Yurikago reluctantly turned around and faced the other



way.

“...Wa”

“—— ! ”

Taiyou was going to grab her twin tail styled hair a third time, however—— his hand only grabbed the empty air.

Did she expect his move, or perhaps she sensed it just before he reached out? Just before she got caught she turned around and rapidly moved the distance.

After avoiding his grasp she gave her a death stare.

For a short while, the atmosphere between the two was a little weird.

“.....Just what exactly are you trying to do?”

“Ah, Un. It’s that, I was ticked off”

“You, aren’t you taking me too lightly?”

“No no, I’m not taking you to lightly, I’m telling the truth”

Taiyou was giving an explanation. It was the obvious truth that he was not underestimating her.

He wasn’t underestimating her but the thing is for some reason or another when he saw her, he just had this urge to play some tricks on her.

Even now he was feeling it. Even after this being the third attempt and her actually avoiding his hands, Taiyou’s mischievous urge doesn’t seem to dissipate.

Even though he was saying he was going to stop, both his hands and his heart was itchy to play tricks on her.

“I’m warning you, if you do that one more time I’ll get really angry you know?”

“Don’t get angry? Definitely don’t okay?”

“Err... Why are you speaking in such a doubtful tone?”

It would seem that she did not know of the great performers.

It stands to reason, she was brought up in a secluded inner room..... No it might be even more than that, her origins is such that it would not be strange for her not to know of such things.

Taiyou thought that it was regrettable that his manner of speech was not understood by her and spoke in a reluctant tone.

“I understand, I seriously won’t do it anymore. That’s cause I will be the one walking in front”

So that he would not be able to pull on her hair anymore, he started to walk in the lead. Yurikago follows him a little while afterwards.

“Geez..... Only you could do something like this to me”

“Is that so?”

“Yeah. for your information, the real me isn’t like this okay? Because in usual circumstances a man who would try to pull on my hair like that would find himself beaten to death for his rudeness”

“Hey, do you take care of your own hair?”

“Are you listening to what I’m saying?”

“I’m listening, I’m listening, The real you is someone who an important person that cannot be approached, and if someone were to act rudely in front of you, they would get their heads beheaded”

“I didn’t say that..... and what’s with that exaggeration! the last part is totally wrong!”

“So, you are saying that you current face has special make up, right? So I was wondering if you were wearing fake hair along with the disguise?”

“Hey listen to what I’m saying!”

Although she was raising her voice as she spoke from behind him, it did not sound like she was angry.

She let out a sigh “Haaa” before proceeding to answer Taiyou’s question.

“It’s my natural hair. It’s just props to give out a mysterious feel to it”

“A prop? But it doesn’t seem all that mysterious. To me it just looks normal and cute”

“I’m not talking about the me right now. I’m talking about the me that sits behind a bamboo blind with hair long enough to droop over the floor”

“.....Ohh, somehow I imagine you to be like some sort of high class noble from that depiction”

“Right? Well that’s the kind of thing that I need to portray”

“Is that so.....”

“What?”

“Can I pull on it one more time?”

“Have you been listening to what I’ve been saying all this time?!”

“Yeah of course, that’s why I asked you before I pulled it. I mean, I’ve been listening to you speak, isn’t there some kind of reward for that? I thought I’d get a medal or something”

“Of course not! You, what do you think a woman’s hair is for?”

“Ah, so what if you are a girl?”

Taiyou spoke as if he was having fun.

“How can I put this. hearing about how you were the one to style it like that, just made me have this urge”

“Because I styled it?”

“Yeah I mean, since you have your make up on and I can’t see your real face, the most real thing about your right now is your natural hair right? After all, even your clothes are apparently not the ones you would normally wear”

After saying this Taiyou glanced backwards over his shoulder for an instant.

The twin tailed girl was wearing a blue type top, with a red skirt and matching striped pattern overknee socks.

Although her image and the atmosphere she exuded right now were clear to see, Taiyou could see fragments of her “true character” and the clothes she would normally wear.

“.....Are you saying that, you want to see my true self?”

“Eh?”

The steps behind him stopped and Taiyou also stops and turns around.

He looked straight at her.

“Well..... If I can I suppose. Are you going to let me see?”

“.....If it’s just for a little while”

As she said this, she undid her tied twin tailed hair. The sound of her hair coming loose resounds \*Pasa\* Her long hair which was liberated extends buoyantly towards the ground, it almost seemed like her whole body was being wrapped with a mantle.

And then, suddenly her whole atmosphere and feeling that she gave off changed.

It was something that Taiyou had experienced before.

Even though the pressure wasn’t attacking his mind, there was something about it that made him feel heavy.

It was something very similar to the killing intent that Shirokiyami released.

When Taiyou was at a loss for words, Yurikgao was the one to initiate the conversation.

“I am the legitimate child of the Junishima family, my name is Junishima Shingetsu Yurikago. This is not the first time we’ve met right?”

Even the tone of her voice changed. Although it still sounded like her voice, the tone lowers and more so than before, it became more dignified.

“.....”

“What’s wrong, did you not want to see the real me?”

“Ahh, no, it’s just that everything about you changed, so I was a little taken by surprise”

“Even though, I’ve already told you beforehand how different I was, you still haven’t been able to mentally prepare yourself?”

“It’s because it was way out of my expectations. You changed so much that I didn’t know what to say”

“Well I did warn you. So what do you think? Even after this, do you still want to pull on my hair?”

After thinking for a while Taiyou responded.

“If you return it to the twin tail hair style I might do it”

“.....”

This time it was Yurikago who was surprised. Taiyou’s answer was just so unexpected.

“If I revert back to that style, you will pull on it?”

“Yeah, for some reason when I see that figure, I just want to pull on it... Ahh no no”

Taiyou unintentionally said what he was really thinking.

He said this right in front of this girl who had such a dignified aura about her. Right now she had this atmosphere that made you unable to hide any secrets from her.

“You—”

“Eh?”

“No, it’s nothing. It’s just that you are the first man to have ever dared to say something like that to me”

“Normally, people don’t really see your face do they? After all aren’t you sitting behind a bamboo blind?”

“—buu”

Yurikago was flustered for a second and then she suddenly burst out into a tiny fit of laughter.

“Hahahaha, that’s true, you are quite right. Normally, people don’t see my real face”

Yurikago had a grand, no it was a heart stirring smile on her face. Even in her twin tail mode, she had quite the bright laughter, but this time it was different in it’s own way.

The laugh had a very profound feeling to it, almost like she was some sort of military commander in the warring period.

“Natsuno Taiyou, you are an interesting man”

“Really?”

Although she was trying to praise him, Taiyou had a complicated expression.

“Shall we go? It will only be a little while longer until we reach your place right?”

“Are we going to go with you still in that appearance?”

“Ahh, in this appearance, you won’t try to play tricks on me”

After saying that, Yurikago confidently takes the lead.

She was standing straight like a pin needle and her high-class appearance was amplified even further.

Well this was to be expected, it was natural behaviour for her and after doing it on a routine basis, it wouldn’t be strange that she mastered how to act like a noble.

“.....”

However, Taiyou had a different thought.

“Just one second”

“Hyann. Hey! Why are you still pulling on my hair?!”

For some reason or another, Taiyou still thought that the girl with the twin tail was her true nature.

## CHAPTER 69

### THE THIRD BRIDE/ INTRODUCTION TO THE CHEAT

---

Night time at Taiyou's Castle. At the Terrace Room: Taiyou, Kohaku, Yurikago and Hera were there.

After playing mischievous pranks to Yurikago along the way home and bringing her to his home, Yurikago had a sour face of discontent, moreover the three twin sisters and Aoba were nowhere to be seen. When he asked Kohaku about them, she told him that they were going out shopping.

Hearing that Yurikago mentions how convenient that was.

Taiyou didn't really understand what she meant when she said that it was convenient, in any case Taiyou led her to a seat and the three of them also went towards the sofa room to sit down.

By the way, Hera was sitting on Taiyou's shoulder.

Perhaps she was curious about Hera's extra-terrestrial existence as Yurikago would oftentimes sneak a peek at Hera and when their gazes met she would become flustered.

When he looked at Yurikago, Taiyou could not help himself but want to play tricks on her.

However he stopped that train of thought, because it would be unfitting to bring her here just to mess around. Taiyou bent his body forwards slightly in a more serious posture and asked her about the main subject.

"Well, will you finally tell me the reason why you've come here? Looking at the situation and the fact that you've investigated that I moved to this completely new place, there must be a special reason for it, right?"

"Yeah, first of all... I've brought this thing for you"



Saying this, Yurikago took out a parcel that came out of the luggage she was carrying when she met Taiyou moments ago.

The parcel was wrapped with a white cloth and it was square shaped, it was about the size of a box, but it was light enough that Yurikago could carry it without being too conspicuous.

Yurikago puts the parcel on top of the table and slid it towards Taiyou presenting it to him.

Is it perhaps some sort of teacake snack? While thinking about what could be inside of the parcel, Kohaku started to talk.

“The thickness... It seems quite secure jyana”

“Because it is one of my things, it is naturally going to be like this”

“I see, so as the next head of the household, you are saying your pocket money is at least that much jyana”

“There isn’t many things that I cannot get my hands on”

“That may be true jyana”

Kohaku and Yurikago, even if a third person wanted to listen to what these two girls were saying, all anyone could discern was an incomprehensible mode of conversation. Without being able to understand, Taiyou turned a confused look towards Kohaku.

“Kohaku-san? What have you guys been talking about?”

“Rather than having me explain it, wouldn’t it be faster if you just took a look at that thing jyaro”

“I suppose I’ll do that”

Taiyou made a clear nod and reached for the package. Kohaku was implying that because he didn’t know about the contents of what could be inside of the parcel he wouldn’t understand it even if she were to explain, therefore he decided to confirm its contents.

Reaching his hands out towards the white cloth, he tore off the wrapping.

The thing that appeared before him was something that even Taiyou would know about, however the amount inside was something he had never seen before.

The thing inside was a ten-thousand yen bill which printed a portrait of Yukichi Fukuzawa and each of these bills were piled up to at least 10 Centimetres each stack.

Seeing so many bundle of bills, it was an unbelievable sight.

Taiyou looked towards Yurikago with an expression of astonishment.

“.....What’s, this?”

“It seems to be 10 million Yen jyana”

“Yeah, it’s 10 Million. I’m giving this to you”

“Wait a minute, why are you giving this to me? I... I’ve never received this kind of—”

“This is the reward for helping with the previous matter”

“The previous... But that was—”

“You were doing it because you wanted to help the three twin sisters, I know you’ve told me”

“Ahh, that’s right”

Taiyou nods in affirmation. In actuality that is exactly what Taiyou thought as well.

“However the case may be, it is also true that you saved me, and because of your actions, I managed to put a dent in Sakura’s plans. Moreover, I.....”

She cut her sentence mid-way and squinted her eyes.

“I managed to hide myself from the public’s eyes”

The moment she said the last sentence, she reverted to her serious self. It was her “true self” that she showed while walking towards here.

Seeing the change in her Taiyou knitted his eyebrows while Kohaku and Hera had an amused expression on their faces.

However, in the next instant, she already reverted back to the Yurikago that Taiyou knew.

“When I thought about it, I felt that it was necessary for me to provide some sort of compensation. So that they do not suspect anything, I did not want to wire transfer the money into your bank account, instead I decided to hand it over personally, well after all because this is my pocket money, it only amounts to this much”

“Well, even if you say that, it’s still quite a lot. You said that this was 10 million yen? I don’t think what I did was deserving of such a huge sum of money”

“You, what do you think about someone who picks up another person’s wallet and when they return the wallet, they get a 10 % cut of the money as remuneration?”

“Eh?”

Taiyou was bewildered and stared at her in wonder due to how sudden the question was.

“What do you mean by that?”

“Don’t worry, just answer me whether you think it is reasonable”

“Well, if you are talking about reasonable, then it probably is? I mean that’s what is already decided by the law”

“Taiyou-chan, the law actually says that the reward is 20 % desuyo”

“Wait, why do you know this kind of thing?! Eh actually, I don’t even want to know. So why did you suddenly ask me such a question?”

“Well, what if the wallet you found contained 100 million yen checks and 10 % of that is naturally 10 million yen?”

“Eh? That is... ummm”

Taiyou thought about it for a little then spoke.

“If you returned the 100 million to the owner then..... well I guess”

“However, in the end, it was just picking up someone’s wallet and returning it to its owner. It isn’t that big of a deal in terms of effort”

“Effort?”

After saying that much, Taiyou understood what she was trying to imply.

“So you are saying you don’t really care about the means or the effort someone goes through, all you are looking at is really the main objective and the results of completing the objective?”

“That’s right. I’m saying that the results that you achieved deserves at least this much. I’ve merely made your contributions that you made with the strength you possess and put it in numeric values. This is the amount that I came up with. That’s all there is to it”

“My power’s value.....”

Taiyou mutters to himself as he loses his words.

This was something that he never considered before.

Since Hera appeared before him, he has been levelling up at a steady pace and now he has obtained a power that can be classified as super human strength.

He was able to break walls of concrete with his bare hands, not only that he was also immune to all types of firearms and projectiles, then taking all this into consideration, he wouldn’t even be categorised as a mere human anymore.

Thinking up to this point, he surmised that levelling up for him has just been a means to do things. Repeating laborious work and obtaining experience, his goal was to obtain a level up.

He was satisfied with just raising his level.

Since then he slowly raised his strength, persistently raised his level and using that strength he was able to defeat Shirokiyami, and from there he fell in love with her and wanted to make her one of his seven brides.

However, just now a new possibility came to his mind.

This was the possibility using the powers he gained from levelling up and turning it into a way he could earn money.

One of the results was the bundle of money he was looking at right in front of him.

This time around he acted as Yurikago's guard, that's because right now the abilities he possessed were related to battle..... he specialised in close ranged combat.

However, right now, his speed status was at 29 points and this was not far behind from his strength value, therefore there is a possibility that he could obtain other skill sets as well.

Additionally, Taiyou had found out that when his stats reached a point of 30 it became closer to the domain of being a super human.

Taiyou opened up his status window in his mind's eye and confirmed his values.

He thought about each unique value apart from strength and imagined the possibilities of different ways to earn money if he increased their values to at least 30 points.

When he did this, he started to think that perhaps, there was nothing that he couldn't do.

"That's amazing desu, as expected of Taiyou-chan desu"

Sitting on his shoulders, Hera's face was full of smiles.

"Hera.....?"

"Taiyou-chan, as long as you keep getting stronger, you will be able to earn even more money desune?"

“That’s true jyana, as long as you are not bothered by laborious work, then the results are clear”

“If it’s that you don’t need to worry nanodesu, Taiyou-chan is a special person desukara”

“Is that so, if you think about it like that it makes it a little unfair na. Well I’ve already seen a glimpse of it though”

“I know right~. Using his own strength the man earns money for his wives and gives them a life of luxury nodesu, it is a man’s romance nanodesu. Kohaku-tan, what kind of luxurious life would you like to lead desuka?”

“Me? Let’s see..... If I were to say right now, what I want would be to live in a new place nojya. I don’t want to live in this kind of run down place, I want to live in a castle jya”

“Ohh, a castle desuka? I would also like that, a place that is a like a dream land desu~”

“A place like Mickey Mouse’s Castle Jyana, if I were able to live there, it would truly be like a dream come true”

Seeing both Kohaku and Hera in such a cheerful mood, their appearance was very pleasant for Taiyou to see.

Suddenly, a voice resounded in his mind.

—Obtain power and influence, if you plan on protecting all these women, you need to have power. Whenever you want to love and protect an additional woman, then you will need strength that is many times stronger than before, have at least that kind of conviction.

“Power..... Influence...”

Atsuko’s words were repeated in his mind.

When they were at the Miyagi Mansion, she gave him advice based on the fact that she was his “senpai”.

Although he didn’t quite know how much more power he needed, he also understood

that if he ever wanted to raise a family, then he needed far more than the average man.

At the very least he would need at least seven more times the power he had right now. If he was planning on having seven brides then this amount is something he needed to strive for.

Right now, a new road had just opened the way in front of him widening his horizons. Taiyou had just used his strength and converted it into social connections and economic power and he witnessed this happening.

He was thinking of ways in order to make use of the power that he had very deeply.

Taiyou was in very deep thought and so he was unreactive to the others right now, therefore Yurikago faced Kohaku and started to talk.

“Anyways, in regards to your case...”

“Me?”

“Yes, I am also planning on paying you. In saying that, this money is from the Junishima household”

“Are you trying to silence me?”

Kohaku had a far deeper knowledge of life and a wealth of experience in comparison to Taiyou, and she immediately understood Yurikago’s intentions.





**I BECAME A LIVING CHEAT**

LIGHTNOVELSTRANSLATIONS.COM



# CHAPTER 70

## THE THIRD BRIDE/ A MOTH FLYING INTO THE FLAME

---

“That’s right. Have you seen the television since that time?”

“It’s one of my old past time hobbies jya”

Kohaku gave an implicit confirmation.

“Then you would understand right? How much bashing that plan “Blood Soul” has received from the public community since being exposed”

“Umu, it seems that an energetic businessman even tried to purchase the whole radio station to cover things up jyana. By the way, they even came to my place for a news interview jya. Well I told them I didn’t know anything though. Only about 100 people in this country know the existence of the eternally little after all. Besides, I am the oldest among them jya”

“Naturally, I will also have this talk with the other eternally little”

“Well I suppose so. After all, if the others were all to speak and blabber too much, it would cause you guys many troubles”

“Therefore, in order to give them hush money, the Junishima clan is paying them a visit”

“In order to silence the information from within, jyana”

These two girls were speaking to each other like they were creating a duet.

They exchanged words at a good rhythmical pace and it was somehow pleasing to the ears, if you were to judge them based on just the sound of their voices then you might think that they were participating in some sort of eloquent speaking contest.

It was Yurikago who stopped their eloquent exchange. She lets out a small sigh as if

she was complaining.

“I thought that if it was you the conversation would go smoothly”

After saying this she took a slight glance at Taiyou. She gave Taiyou the kind of look that said this isn't going very smoothly because you are involved. After that she returned to look back at Kohaku.

“Yes, this is a settlement fund. So as to silence the people involved in the plan it is necessary to put a substantial amount of compensation money. Some of them may even be in a higher position than me, but it is still necessary to persuade them”

“Fumu, in that case I can expect a good amount of money from this jyana”

“I will present to you an amount so that you will never have to worry about food again. That's the kind of instructions that I received”

“Well I was never worried about that to begin with. But, alright I understand jya”

“If you were to be so inclined you could play a little hard to get and be more reluctant, as that would probably help me out as well. In this way we can strike back a little at the person in charge of the operations”

“Umu, understood jya”

Kohaku gave a nod and the conversation ended there. Yurikago changed her serious expression and used an amazed expression as she turned to face Taiyou.

“In any case, if he was as understanding as you, things would be so much easier”

“He is still on the path of growing up jya, if you can overlook him just a little, I would be thankful jya”

“Even though he has that strange rebellious nature?”

“Well that is what pubescence is isn't it? They wouldn't be cute if every teen acted way above their age right?”

“Fuun, if one of my subordinates were acting like that, I'd instantly expel him”

“Is that so? However what if it wasn’t your subordinate but instead a mercenary?”

“...I get your main point”

“That is good to know”

Kohaku nods and for some reason she had this smirk on her face.

Yurikago felt a little sensation of discomfort from seeing that smile.

“.....What’s with that face?”

“It’s nothing much, it’s just that I thought if we were to use you properly we can receive a lot of financial benefits. You’re going to pay us for the results of our work jyarō?”

Kohaku was saying one thing, but it was evident to Yurikago that she was trying to change the subject.

If that was all you were thinking, there is no way that you would show that kind of smirk Yurikago thought to herself. In any case, Yurikago decided not to press the matter.

“Naturally. Punishment and rewards are given justly, this is how an organisation has to function, otherwise we will not be able to tell who is talented and who is corrupt”

“That’s an unusual way of thinking nowadays jya”

“After all, I’m going to be the next head”

“That may be true”

For a moment there seemed to be sparks coming out between the two girls as they directly faced each other, but that was only for an instant.

For Yurikago, since she had already talked about what she came here to do, there was nothing else more to discuss with Kohaku.

She voluntarily removed her glance and was standing up from her seat.

“Well then, I will be heading out”

“Umu? Didn’t you travel here incognito? isn’t it already too late if you wanted to return to the island via authorized means?”

“Because I was already prepared for this before I set out, I already organized a place that I can stay overnight”

“I see”

Kohaku understood. However, Hera who was silent up to this point suddenly butted in the conversation.

“Eh~, Yuri-chan are you going home?”

“Uu.....”

Yurikago moans and she couldn’t speak any words. It would seem that she was still not used to the existence of the being named Hera.

“C-calling me Y-yuri, what’s with that.....?”

“Yes desu, Yuri-chan when you first met Taiyou-chan, you introduced yourself as Yurikago desu, that was the name you gave yourself desu. Therefore I decided to name you Yuri-chan desuyo”

“Now that you mention it, that did happen before. Youran = Yurikago, when we first met up you were using an alias weren’t you jya?”

“It wasn’t that I was trying to deceive you. Because Yurikago isn’t a completely false name either”

“Indeed there is some truth to that”

“Yuri-chan Yuri-chan, You should stay here overnight desu. If you wait just a little longer, Koto=chan, Suzu-chan and Kaza-chan will be returning home. The dinner they can make is really delicious desuyo. You need to try it desu, after that everyone will take a bath together and at night we will be having a girl’s talk desu”

“Are you sure you can decide that kind of thing yourself? Even though you are not the head of this household?”

Yurikago said this while turning her glance towards Kohaku. You aren't going to start saying the same things as her right? That was the kind of gaze Yurikago was giving Kohaku.

“Ahh, don't look at me I'm not the head either dazo. The head of the household right now is my husband jya”

“Husband?”

“In the literal meaning of the word jya”

“You are telling me..... its”

“I dedicated it to him, the deed to this house and everything”

Yurikago did not like useless exchanges of information. Because she met with a lot of people who talked about things in a very roundabout manner she always disliked those kind of people.

If she were to discern what Kohaku was saying, it was pretty obvious as to what she “dedicated”. Thereupon she glared at Taiyou who was still brooding and lost in thought with a displeased expression on her face.

“.....Lolicon”

“No, rather shouldn't it be a baba fetish jya?”

“Even that would be better”

“Is that really true kana?”

“What are you trying to imply?”

“I'm not trying to imply much jya”

“.....”

“In any case, you will stay over Yuri-chan. If you don’t stay over, I’m going to do something mean to you desuyo~”

“W-what are you planning on doing.....?”

As expected Yurikago was a hard person to deal with.

Even though Hera was trying to coerce her to stay here she herself didn’t quite know what she needed to do.

“T-trick and trick”

“Umu, this is really interesting jya”

Saying that Kohaku had a hearty laugh. On the other hand, Yurikago showed a vacant expression on her face.

“Kohaku-tan, at this sort of time, what do I need to do desuka?”

Judging from the reaction of the two, it was clear that they were planning something. Hera was greatly perplexed and so she asked Kohaku for her opinion.

“Are you really going to ask her in front of me?”

“Yeah, that’s because I’m not good at this kind of stuff. I’m sorry desu”

“Uuu”

Looking at the situation Yurikago could not help but to become worried.

“In that case, I will teach you a method. First let me confirm, other than people who kissed with husband there is nobody else that can see your existence, is that right?”

“Yes desu, that is definitely the case desu”

“Let me ask you another thing, how far away can you exist from husband nojya?”

“The bond between Taiyou-chan and I is infinite desu”

“That makes me envious jyana”

After confirming this fact, Kohaku cleared her throat and laughed in a strange manner.

“In that case, all you need to do is stick right next to her as she is walking home”

“Is it alright if I just stick to her desuka?”

“That’s right jya, all you need to do is stick to her until she gets home. And then whenever she is talking to someone or doing anything, you should constantly talk to her”

“Wait a minute! what are you teaching her?!”

Yurikago instinctively raises her voices and protests. The method Kohaku taught to Hera was just that destructive.

Yurikago was imagining just how crazy it would seem if a mysterious life form like Hera that only she could see was sticking to her every move and then continuously talking to her.

Will her spirit and mind be ruined first? Or will her sanity be doubted by others first?

She thought that it might reach that kind of disastrous stage.

“Just for assurance let me ask one last thing, is she able to exclude herself from being able to physical sense you?”

“That is impossible desu. I am Taiyou-chan’s desu. If there is one person in this world that can kill me, it will only be Taiyou-chan desu. Even if you brought a god or an illusion, I would still have a method to deal with it nanodesuyo”

“Well, you heard it jya”

Having the conversation with Hera, Kohaku turned to face Yurikago with a smile. It was exactly like a devil’s smile, that was how Yurikago saw it.

“Well then, what are you going to do?”

“What are you going to do desuka~?”

Kohaku and Hera was working together and pressuring Yurikago into a corner, in

actual fact, she didn't really have much of a choice anymore...



# CHAPTER 71

## THE THIRD BRIDE/

### TOTAL OF THREE MINUTES IN THE BATHROOM

---

“Ku ku ku,, Having this many flowers is indeed good. It’s a shame that some of them have yet to be plucked jyana”

“If you put it that way it makes me not want to go in”

Yurikago was bickering with Kohaku. Even though Yurikago was trying to talk back to Kohaku, the young looking old woman turns a deaf ear and completely ignores her.

Next to these two girls there was: Kotone, Suzune, Kazane and Aoba.

The women were all nude, they were completely naked just like when they were first born. If you were to ask why, well that’s because they were all in the bathroom.

In the building named as Taiyou’s Castle, which was supposedly design as a residential apartment complex, the bathroom was quite spacious even with all of them entering together. All the women were taking a bath together right now.

After eating dinner, Kohaku suggested that they should all take a bath together. Under the pretext of trying to deepen their friendship Kohaku invited the girls to soak together.

Taiyou on the other hand was still in deep contemplation and it was like he was unable to see anyone else. Even when the three twin sisters and Aoba came home from shopping, or when Kohaku was trying to help out with the “preparation” of dinner while actually being a nuisance he was deep in his own thoughts.

For quite the long time, he was just lost in thought.

If the three sisters didn’t stop him, he might have not realized that he was picking up the soy sauce bottle instead of water, and he might have drunk it up.

That was just how much of a daze he was in, it was almost like his spirit was out of his

own body.

Naturally the three sisters who didn't know why Taiyou was acting in such a manner worriedly asked about it. With that Kohaku told the girls "Taiyou has reached a turning point jya". As expected the three sisters didn't know what she meant by that. All they knew was that it must have been something really important and that they sincerely did not want to obstruct Taiyou.

To that point there was no problem at all.

In actuality while the girls might not completely understand what he was going through, they had no doubt that it was something that was deeply involved with their future, and considering the fact that Kohaku also acknowledged this fact, they wanted to fully support him.

The problem came a little afterwards. Because she thought they might become a hindrance to Taiyou if they just wandered around the house aimlessly, Kohaku invited them all for a bath.

And thus, due to such a thing happening all the women were in the bathroom.

As per expected everyone was in their birthday suits in the bathroom.

When Kohaku mentioned that there are "flowers" in the room, it wasn't just a joke. In truth, all the women in this bathroom were splendidly attractive and had their own charms akin to beautiful flowers.

Kohaku as her name suggests had the whitest skin amongst the girls in the bathroom. Although her body was quite underdeveloped like a child, if one looked closely at Kohaku, they would see her rich adult-like sex appeal.

Well among the three sisters, you can also say that they are still in the developing stages for their bodies. However, while their bodies are thin, they also have their sweet swelling parts that emphasized their womanly areas, and an adorable look that made you want to protect them.

The person with the healthiest physique was Aoba who had unfastened her ponytail hair. Her perky breasts that were pointing upwards reminded one of the finest quality

gems, there was this charm to it that increased a person's desire to keep it close at hand.

Lastly, there was the girl with the long hair that draped over her entire body like a mantle. She had a pair of peaks that resembled peaches and a silky smooth hair, her body was like a work of art that made you focus your attention to it. It was the perfect combination of beauty and elegance it was one of those high-level bodies.

To think that in this large bathroom all these women were assembled, it would be a modest expression to say that there was flowers in the bathroom.

"Umm... Kohaku-san"

"When you mentioned plucking, you mean by Taiyou-san?"

"We..... aren't really knowledgeable about this sort of thing"

Saying that the three sisters huddled together.

"Kukuku, that was just a joke jya. Husband is not going to do such a thing; he is too preoccupied right now jya. You saw it too right, the state husband is in?"

"Well that's true"

Yurikago was the one to respond to Kohaku's words in a prompt manner. As if she was trying to show off her nice proportions Yurikago stretched out her back as she entered the center of the steamy bath.

It almost seemed like she was used to being seen, or perhaps being seen did not bother her in the slightest, it was that kind of atmosphere.

Doing that, the three sisters were staring fixatedly at her body.

"Nevertheless, you guys are truly an interesting bunch. While your faces are exactly the same, the size of your bodies are entirely different. If the size of your heads were exactly the same it would be really revolting, but it seems that each of you have nice proportions for the size of your bodies. How do I say this..... it reminds me of the Seven-five-three festival?" *(TL Note: this festival is also known as Shichi-Go-San Festival and is said to have originated in the Heian period amongst court nobles who would*

*celebrate the passage of their children into middle childhood)*

Although they were strictly different, the three sisters had different bodily proportions yet their faces looked exactly the same. The three sisters knew exactly what Yurikago was implying.

“Well that’s because we three are triplets”

“Yes, it is natural that we look similar”

“However, we also don’t know why only our bodies are different in size”

“Has it been like that since a long time ago?”

“No, after we entered elementary school we started showing our differences”

“For some reason or another the rate that we grew was at a different pace from each other”

“Before then, we had been just like any other triplet”

“Hey there’s something I’ve been wondering about for a while now. Did the three of you used to talk in this manner in the past?”

The person who interrupted the conversation was Aoba who had posed this question. Unlike Yurikago, Aoba was acting the complete opposite, even though this bath only had women in it, she was really shy and she used a towel and her hands to cover her private places.

To Aoba who was shy, Kohaku asks back.

“Oh by the way, since when have you been classmates with these girls nojya?”

“Since middle school up until now. The Hayakawa-san from before didn’t used to speak in this sort of manner, until just recently, I feel like they didn’t speak in this manner”

“That is...”

Kotone was the one to speak first but then the three sisters exchanged glances with each other. They were worried about whether they should answer this question or

not.

After a short while, the girls resolved themselves as they turned towards Aoba and started to speak.

“That was because we tried to conform with society standards”

“Yeah, it’s the same thing as when someone says slang or if someone speaks with formality”

“The way we talked was one of formality”

“In other words, this is how you guys normally talk?”

“““Yes!”““

“.....The reason you became like this is due to that Natsuno-kun?”

“““Yes, it’s all thanks to Taiyou-san!”““

Aoba made it seem like it was Taiyou’s fault but the three sisters corrected it. It wasn’t Taiyou’s fault, it was thanks to Taiyou. To the three girls, this was something that they could not concede to.

While the girls were chatting with each other, Kohaku slipped out of the bath and sat down on a wooden stool.

She was applying a handful of body soap to her body with a sponge. After a moment her pink body was covered in bubbles.

“You really have such a white skin, almost like some sort of sculpture”

“While that is very flattering, your body looks even more like a sculpture than mine jya. The proportions of your body is capable of even making a woman jealous of you jya”

“You think so? I don’t think very highly of it though”

“Fumu, hasn’t there been anyone to praise you of this fact up until now?”

“There is no one in my presence that has ever dared to praise me, well to begin with there is rarely anyone who gets to see my true colors”

“If that’s true than that’s a shame jya”

Kohaku washes her body as she lets out a sigh.

“When someone puts great care in taking care of a flower that’s when the flower is capable of beautifully blooming, you’ve heard about this jyarō?”

“That’s if you are a flower”

“This saying isn’t only limited to plants nojya. In recent years, why have women been compared to a flower? that’s because there are too many properties that resemble a woman within a flower jya. If water is not given, it will wither, and the more love it is given by its owner the more it will bloom in full glory jya”

“Oh, yeah?”

“Let me say it in even more common terms. The more a woman falls in love the more beautiful she becomes, in a time of love a female hormone is secreted and this hormone is able to change the body by itself to make it even more beautiful nojya. Moreover, the female hormone is after all secreted the most when a woman is being loved jyayo”

“I see”

“Therefore thinking up till this point, your beauty can only grow worse jya. Because of that you should imagine just how much more beautiful you would become if a man enters your life”

“Even though you are saying such a thing, how come I don’t really feel envy or vexation from your words?”

“Desiring something that you cannot obtain is only something the immature youth does jya, moreover I also have pride in this body of mine”

“Pride?”

“Umu, this is a body that my husband has said to be beautiful, and it is also a body that has received his love jya”

“.....”

Yurikago tightly purses her lips. After having a conversation with Kohaku, it was instead Yurikago that felt vexation.

Kohaku had a confidence in her and even though she was clearly handicapped in terms of bodily proportions her eyes was still dazzling and radiant.

Above all, even though Kohaku praised her to be beautiful, in Yurikago's eyes, it was in fact Kohaku who was more beautiful than her. Kohaku's body was quite plain and almost hidden within the bubbles, by any standard her body shouldn't have any sex appeal to it. However, to Yurikago, her body actually looked like it was the most sexy out of any woman she has ever seen.

(Perhaps.....)

A thought started to sprout in her mind. It was like when the snow started to thaw and a new bud sprouted from the ground.

“Woops!”

At this point her thoughts was interrupted as if heaven was saying that it was still too early to think such things. The sponge that Kohaku had been using slipped out of her small hands and flew in an arc like a parabola.

Peta\* a sound of it colliding with something resounded, as the sponge landed on to Yurikago's breasts and then it fell on the ground.

On her perfect body, there was the mark of a sponge on it. To her maiden body which was pink in colour, a white slimy soapy thing was clinging to her skin defiling it.



摇篮、皓白、琴音、鈴音、風音、  
そして青葉。

じゅうに しま ゆり かこ  
双六島摇篮

はや かわ さん し まい  
早川三姉妹  
こと な すず ね かざ ね  
(琴音、鈴音、風音)

あすま や こ はく  
四阿皓白

六人は、惜しげもなく  
裸体を湯気に晒している。

みや ぎ あお ば  
宮城青葉

I BECAME A LIVING CHEAT

LIGHTNOVELTRANSLATIONS.COM



## CHAPTER 72

### THE THIRD BRIDE / WHILE THERE IS NO DEMON

---

“Umu, it is very erotic nojya “

As if she was speaking for all the pubescent boys in the world, Korhaku raised her thumbs up as she spoke.

The person herself didn't really understand the meaning behind Kohaku's words and merely tried to wipe the white foamy bubbles dripping down her chest with her palm.

“Erotic?”

“Fumu, Don't you understand these kinds of things? Then perhaps if I explained it to you, you would be able to understand?”

“What have you been talking about since a while ago? So what if bubbles are attached to my body?”

“Fumu, it looks like someone just pasted something all over you jya”

“What are you saying?!!”

The person who reacted to Kohaku's words were Aoba. Unlike Yurikago who was brought up as a princess, for better or for worse Aoba had been raised in a common manner.

“However, the fact that he is not here to pluck the flowers is becoming more and more regrettable. As the main character of a romantic comedy, it is the standard to show up in a situation like this and cause trouble jyaga.....”

While saying this, Kohaku glanced at the entrance of the bathroom towards the smoked glass door.

“It doesn't seem to be going that well jyana”

“.....I understand that you were talking about something sexual”

Yurikago breathed out a sigh. While she may not have the knowledge in these types of matters she was by no means a foolish person, in fact she had a very high comprehension rate and was quite the intelligent human being.

“Even now, my breasts seemed like it had milk or semen pasted all over it, that’s the kind of thing you were talking about right?”

“Very insightful jya, by the way it’s a secret as to which one I was thinking about jya”

“I don’t even want to know”

Saying this Yurikago sighed again.

Picking up the sponge she dropped, Kohaku resumed washing her body.

On the side the three twin sisters were sitting in a circle as they washed down each other’s backs.

Meanwhile, Yurikago was standing with her imposing figure as she looked at the situation.

Aoba was curious about what she was doing and so she talked to the girl that rarely involved herself with others.

“Her, what are you doing just standing there?”

“I’m watching, no, I’m learning”

“Learning?”

“Ehh, as it is I cannot wash myself, therefore I’m seeing what everyone else is doing and then I plan to wash my body”

“What do you mean—”

What is this about? Aoba was in the midst of confusion when Kohaku suddenly clapped her hands together.

“Incidentally, you are like a princess within the Junishima family jyatana, up until now everything around you have been taken care of by the low-ranking people of your

family”

“That’s right”

“Well that seems about right, therefore you are able to maintain such a beautiful appearance jyana”

Folding her arms together Kohaku nodded her head up and down in acknowledgement.

“Eh, What do you mean?”

“This girl has a very exaggerated upbringing, it is the so called daughter that lived in a secluded room jya. Ever since she was born, not to mention taking a bath for herself, she doesn’t even need to wipe her own butt jya”

“Ehhhhhhh?”

Aoba was left flabbergasted.

What Kohaku said was clearly going too far that even Yurikago started to protest.

“Of course I do that kind of thing myself!”

“Hou, you do? I sincerely thought that you left that to one of your subordinates”

“Obviously I don’t?”

“However, you are inexperienced with bathing jyaro?”

“I’ve at least bathed in a hot spring before”

Yurikago said this as if it was a natural thing.

Declaring such a thing whilst standing there, she appeared to be some sort of divine being.

To such a person, the three twin sisters asked timidly.

“Excuse me, Yurikago-san, if you are unable to wash yourself then...”

“Would you allow us to wash you?”

“Please let us do so”

“Hayakawa-san? What are you girls saying?”

“That’s because, Yurikago-san is our benefactor”

“We must at least do this much”

“Rather, if we are able to repay your kindness even a little, we would be glad to do so”

The three sisters spoke as if this was the norm, and Kohaku could not help but to smile gently.

Aoba was the only person here that didn’t know the things that happened between them, she was left with her mouth wide open and was at a loss for words.

To the three twins, Yurikago still asked them calmly.

“Will you help me then?”

“““Yes!”””

“Thank you, I’m sorry about this”

Subtly putting her chin down, Yurikago gave them her thanks. Whilst she did have a high birth origin, it was not like she didn’t hesitate in asking help for this sort of thing.

Standing still in that place, she was now waiting for the three sisters to help her.

While Aoba was still rolling her eyes in bewilderment, the three sisters got ready to wash Yurikago’s body cheerfully.

Turning the faucet and letting the hot water out, placing the bathing chairs and grabbing the sponge and body soap.

Having perfect coordination, the three sister combination was very effective and completed all the preparations instantly.

“I’m sorry to have kept you waiting”

“Yurikago-san, please come over here”

“We will wash you”

Leading Yurikago by the hand, the girls led her to the bathing chair that they prepared.

—Zuru.

At that moment, a wet sound arrived in the ears of all the girls who were in the bathroom.

It was the sound of wet feet sliding across the bathroom floor.

And just like that . . . . . the three girls simultaneously lost their balance at the exact same time.

Dongara Gashann (*Crashh*), A classical sound effect of someone falling could be heard as they fell.

The three twin sisters had involved Yurikago in their crash as they were holding on to her hands.

“Hayakawa-san!”

“Fumu, This is a wonderful spectacle jya”

On the one side, Aoba was really worried about her classmate who had just slipped as she gasped, on the other hand, Kohaku lifted the edge of her mouth and showed a really amused expression on her face.

The three sisters and Yurikago had fallen on the bathroom floor, not too sure about how the mechanics of the fall worked out, but they were thoroughly intertwined with each other.

Kazane was holding down Yurikago, Suzune was straddling her, and lastly Kotone was pressing her breasts against Yurikago’s face.

The sight of these youthful girls entwined together whilst being naked, if a pubescent boy was to see this scene right now, it wouldn't be strange for them to rush into the toilet immediately, it was that kind of dreamy scene.

"Fumu, for there to be such a splendid scene, it would be totally wrong for us not to record such a moment. You girls just wait here; I will come back with Husband's phone jya"

"Don't come ba- Hyaa"

Yurikago was raising her voice in protest but, as she struggled to get up, Kotone's foot slips once again and this time she was thrusting her hips towards Yurikago's face.

"Wait, what are you girls doing?!"

The one who objected to this was Aoba. It wasn't because she was in the bathroom, there was something else that made her raise her voice whilst she blushed.

"I'm sorry! We didn't mean to do such a thing"

"That's right, please believe us!"

"Our bodies only belong to Taiyou-san!"

The three sisters were desperately trying to explain, although they tried to hurriedly stand up, whenever they moved they would lose their footing again somehow, they only made it worse as they became even more tangled up with Yurikago.

Seeing this Aoba was going to help out..... however, her body sensed that it would also become dangerous for her and she could not do it.

The four people were only able to get up after a full three minutes had went past.



After finally being able to wash the body clean, the girls all entered into the bathtub together.

As if she was trying to hide, Aoba submerged her body from the shoulder down into

the hot water, on the other hand, the three sisters and Yurikago didn't really mind it if their bodies were seen and the upper portion of their bodies were floating above the water. Kohaku was sitting on the edge of the bathtub and only her feet were soaked in the hot water.

Everyone had their own way and preferences for bathing.

"You girls, are you normally like that?"

Yurikago tone of voice was slightly filled with amazement as she asked the question. Yurikago was pretty easily letting the incident pass, and this was also perhaps because due to her princess upbringing, she didn't really feel shy being exposed to an unnecessary party.

"That's not true!"

"That was an accident"

"Normally that kind of thing is impossible!"

"Is that so? I was convinced for a second that you were doing the same kind of thing as him"

"Same kind of—"

The person who reacted to Yurikago's words was Aoba. Sealing her lips in a panic she grandly blushes as half of her face sunk into the hot water.

"Well, at most it was just a happening jya. Our husband doesn't need to do stuff like that, even without causing this type of trouble, he has already been able to build a harem jya"

Nobody understood the double meaning of what Kohaku was trying to imply in this bathroom. Hera who usually joined in and Taiyou who usually retorted her, none of them were here right now.

However, even if people did not understand the meaning behind her words, it was already enough for them to understand the direct meaning.

“.....That seems to be true”

Yurikago lightly shuts her eyelids and nods subtly.

The three sisters were looking strongly at Kohaku.

When you see how adorable they looked, it was indeed obvious that they didn't need to create any ecchi happenings for things to proceed.

However, the moment Yurikago next opened her eyes, she was amazed at the scene before her.

“Hey, you really said that there is no need for happenings? Then what do you call that?”

Yurikago raised her hand and pointed at something.

“Eh, Kyaaaaahhh?!”

Turning her gaze to where Yurikago was pointing Aoba let out a grand scream and even her head was completely submerged under the bathtub.

On the other side of the smoked glass, a tall shadow of a person jumped into the view of the women's eyes.



# CHAPTER 73

## THE THIRD BRIDE / AWAKENING

---

Beyond the smoky glass door the girls could see the figure of an intruder, the girl's reactions were divided into two types.

The three sisters and Aoba quickly sank their bodies into the water to hide themselves. Aoba was the girl who even screamed out.

On the other hand, both Kohaku and Yurikago were completely unperturbed and they didn't even try to hide themselves.

Among the girls, the three sister's reaction was slightly unexpected, well nonetheless, they were still young maidens at heart and they were weak to surprise attacks.

"Ah, sorry sorry. The person who screamed just then, was it Aoba? I'm really sorry if I surprised you"

"Muu"

"That voice..... is it Akiha?"

Everyone was taken aback as the voice that came was different from their expectations.

Because there was only Taiyou left in this house who hadn't entered the bath, everyone thought that he would appear, therefore when it was someone else they couldn't help but to be surprised.

"That's right, do you mind it if I open this? I'm opening it okay?"

Without waiting for permission from the girls inside of the bath, Akiha slid the glass doors as it rattled while it opened.

Indeed it was only her figure that showed up.

Not wearing her usually school uniform, Akiha was just wearing a casual outfit.

Wearing a fluffy one-piece dress combined with denim short pants, she was dressed casually and this suited her candid atmosphere.

She who appeared had sparkling eyes.

“There are five pair of breasts..... How wonderful!”

“What are you saying Akiha!”

Aoba was protesting at the behaviour of her best friend.

“It’s boobies you know? Aren’t they wonderful? Breasts, butts and a man’s sexy well-built arms are part of god’s miracles, at least that’s what I believe”

“What an awkward choice nojya. Well, I don’t intend to criticise it though”

“Eh?”

Akiha darts her eyes across Kohaku’s body from top to bottom.

“You, don’t have any breasts jyan?”

“What a blunt way to speak nojya. Well, I suppose it is true jyana”

Kohaku didn’t argue and withdrew easily. Whilst still having a composed face, Kohaku slowly submerges her body and sunk into the bathtub.

“So, what’s going on? What led to such a wonderful event?”

“Leaving that aside, how did you manage to come in here?”

“Eh? Ahh well, I came from the front door entrance? I even tried ringing the chime but nobody was coming out to answer. Therefore, because the door wasn’t locked, I just came in without permission”

“Was husband not present?”

Kohaku was doubtful.

“He was there, in the place that looked like a hall of some sort. He was sitting on the

sofa, with a “thinking person pose”, he didn’t even realize that I had come in”

“I see”

Kohaku nods. After questioning her Kohaku got the gist of things and left the matter at that for the time being.

The other girls also seemed to have understood the situation and so they didn’t say anything, however, this only made Akiha raise a question.

Looking around the bathroom, Akiha’s gaze landed on to Yurikago.

“Back to my question, can you please explain how this wonderful situation came about? How did it come to this? Moreover, didn’t the amount of people increase in comparison to before? Who are you? Are you also a new member of his harem?”

“I’m just a guest. Or more like, why did you come to such a conclusion?”

“Well you’re here in his house, besides you are absurdly beautiful”

“Well if you put it like that, you also fit the description to be in his harem?”

“Well that’s not true, I mean look I’m not naked”

“Fumu, in that case Miss Aoba is going to be a member of the harem jyana. She’s in this house right now, moreover she’s completely in the nude jya”

“Ehhhhh?”

While still having half of her face sunk in the hot water, Aoba raised a scream.

Her reaction was like a girl that didn’t want to listen to their conversation any longer.

“Well as for Aoba, it’s only a matter of time”

“It’s not only a matter of time! Why are you assuming that!”

“It’s my woman’s intuition, my intuition whispers to me that Aoba will sooner or later fall for him”

“Indeed, that makes sense”

“Umu, if that’s the case then I understand jya”

Akiha had her thumbs up as she spoke and both Yurikago and Kohaku was in agreement with her words.

“Don’t be convinced so easily! I, definitely won’t become like that”

Unable to hold it any longer at their teasing, Aoba’s large voice protested against her best friend’s words.



After the women had finished taking their baths, each of them returned to the living room terrace.

Excluding Akiha who didn’t take a bath, Yurikago, Kohaku, the three sisters and Aoba who was dragged into the bath without her consent, all of these girls were wearing a towel yukata that was quite revealing on their skin. A sweet aroma of soap drifted about the room.

The young girls were not wearing any perfume and so this room was filled with their natural captivating smell.

Even after such a long bathing time had passed, Taiyou was still in deep thought.

Sitting on the sofa, with a bent forward posture and his elbows on top of his thighs, he had both his fingers linked and placed against his chin.

This was indeed the posture someone took when they were thinking about something, only his eyes were staring right in front of him.

“Why is he being like this?”

Because she came a bit later than the others, she didn’t know the previous circumstances and thus asked the other girls.

“He is approaching a turning point in his life jya”

“Heeh, that’s kind of cool jyan?”

Akiha had an expression that was in between admiring him and not really admiring him as she approached Taiyou.

Akiha waved her arms right in front of him in order to get his attention and when this didn’t work, she made her hand into the shape of a megaphone before placing it right next to his ear saying “Oiii”. Even after all that there was no reaction from him, therefore she grabbed the white cloth which was on the table and placed it on top of his head.

“Ohh, it’s sticking and not falling off. What an amazing amount of concentration!”

“Should we try putting an orange on top as well? It makes me really curious as to how many things we can pile up on top of his head jya”

“What are you saying Kohaku-san?!”

“Taiyou-san is thinking really seriously”

“You must not disturb him!”

The three sisters objected to Kohaku’s idea. As if turning a deaf ear, the young looking old woman just smiled.

Akiha kept trying to make distractions for Taiyou but the three sisters also started to obstruct her from doing so.

The four girls were gathered around Taiyou and was making a lot of commotion.

“Are you fine with not doing anything?”

At this point, Yurikago asked Kohaku.

Unlike the three sisters, Kohaku was just spectating and so Yurikago became curious.

“Umu, I’m fine with it jya. Instead I am really interested and expectant at just how far husband is able to concentrate so deeply, irrespective of the noise and the disturbance around him jya. The more that this continues, I feel as if husband will surely

experience great growth when he does return jya. Or perhaps, it may have no consequence upon the result”

“I see, you are quite strict on him aren’t you?”

“Isn’t this only proper for the man that will become the central pillar of this household?”

“That may be true”

“By the way, what do you mean by a turning point?”

Perhaps she was bored with playing around with Taiyou, but Akiha suddenly started to ask questions again.

She had the kind of personality that would ask whatever it was that she didn’t understand.

Seeing this Kohaku gave her a model answer. Ignoring the fact that it may be bad to talk about these details with an outsider, Kohaku started to explain in detail about Taiyou’s present condition.

Hearing the story Akiha only needed to think about it for a little while before striking her hand with a fist in realisation.

“In other words, he is thinking about the best way in order to support the women of his harem? And because of that he is seriously considering all the possibilities?”

“That’s exactly right jyana”

“How wonderful jyan. Is that so, is that the type of earnest man he is?”

“What’s this, are you perhaps interested in him jya?”

“Not right now”

Akiha immediately rejects the idea. And yet, there was no bad meaning in those words.

Judging from her frank tone, it was just like she said, she was just not interested right now.

“What a prompt answer jyana”

“Well that’s because, I’m not really in love with him or anything”

“Heeh..... You’re the first person I’ve met that spoke words in a such a literal sense”

“That’s true jyana, speaking in such a literal manner without any sarcasm or evil intentions behind your words, it’s been several decades since I’ve known someone like you jyana”

“Are you praising me?”

“Of course”

“Praising you without holding back jya”

“That so? Thanks then”

Indulging in the praise of the two girls, Akiha radiantly smiles as she gave them her thanks.

“Leaving that aside, Akiha why are you here?”

“I was just worried about you. I was the one who left you here yesterday, and so I was just wondering how you were faring after that”

“.....Yea”

“For a second, I felt responsible but seeing you so lively makes me feel relieved, it seems that compared to yesterday you have a happy face jyan”

“Eh?”

“Well, at least now, I don’t see an expression on your face that tells me you want to commit suicide jya”

“I..... Did I really have that kind of face?”

“Yes, you were really depressed”

“And you also seemed really out of it”

“Like Kohaku-san said you looked like you wanted to die”

“Did something happen?”

“Other than hanging out with her while we were all nude, nothing else happened jya”

“Just doing that made her like this? Wonderful!”

Akiha was saying her favourite word, and Aoba was blushing. As if he was waiting for the completion of their conversation, Taiyou’s eyes began to shimmer back alive and his gaze was placed on the girls around him.



# CHAPTER 74

## THE THIRD BRIDE/ TRUE MOTIVES

---

Effort, Friendship and Success there was a time period when these three things were a big deal. There is a “road to the kingdom” type element to this ideal, whereby being able to attain those three things was considered to be the perfect life.

However, is it really possible to achieve success purely just by making an effort?

Strictly speaking, there was certainly such an age. Opportunities were everywhere and even if you didn’t put in any effort..... there was a period of time where you could still achieve success.

However, these people who had things easy for them started to fantasize about what it would be like to put in the hard work..... Face adversities and hardship, and overcoming those obstacles in order to reach success. In order to meet the public demand, many stories that followed this format started to appear one after another.

Nevertheless, the real world was not such a sweet place, even if you put in a huge amount of effort, it doesn’t necessarily guarantee that you will be successful.

Natsuno Taiyou, knew this. At a comparatively young age, he had already developed this knowledge about the society.

Therefore, he stopped making an effort. If a huge amount of effort was made and yet there was no guarantee of a reward, why should anyone go out of their way to expend all that energy? It was such an absurd thing and that is why he stopped doing it.

No, to be precise, it is more correct to say that he stopped “exerting effort in things that did not guarantee a reward”.

He escaped to the world of games.

Inside of a game, specifically within the RPG genre, the game system endorsed the action of repeated grinding, and the more that you grinded you are guaranteed to become stronger.

The strength you gained was proportionate to the effort you exerted, whenever you put in the work there will always be some sort of compensation given.

This did not mean that Taiyou gave up on his real life.

It was just that he was completely absorbed in the game system, and in real life he was covered with a light feeling of hopelessness.

However, now...

He had once again started to come back to his real life. Making an effort and acquiring more strength, he wanted to make his “Brides” live a happy life.

That was his goal.

Taiyou made his resolve to achieve those goals, as a means to achieve those goals he was thinking of ways to adapt himself to the requirements.

He believed that with the power he had he was definitely able to have his “seven brides”. However just because he had these powers, he didn’t think that it was guaranteed that he would make his “seven brides” happy.

Therefore, he was going to make his best effort to arrive at those goals..... He was desperately thinking about the means to achieve the maximal optimal results for his efforts.

The method of changing the power he was guaranteed to gain from his repetitive work and with the minimum amount of loss, convert that into his brides happiness.

Finally, he was able to come to a conclusion.



“.....What kind of situation is this?”

This was first thing he said when he came back to his senses.

He was not able to grasp the situation at all, since to him, just a little while back there was only Kohaku and Yurikago in the room, but before he knew it the three sisters and

Aoba were home, and even Akiha was here.

Even though this living room was capable of physically supporting many people, having so many people come into this room made it very lively.

Taiyou was really curious about the circumstances of how this came to be.

“Did you finally overcome it.....?”

Kohaku spoke in a profound manner.

“No I haven’t overcome anything. If you show that kind of triumphant look that only exists in a manga, I’ll be troubled”

“However, you have a face that tells me you’ve decided on something. It’s like the face of a male that is about to go on the hunt *jya*”

“.....I only thought of this idea that I wanted to try doing, after asking for some opinions on it I would like to decide on what to do next”

“I understand, we’re going to have a family conference *jyana*”

“Family conference? No I want to ask you—”

Taiyou was about to finish his sentence but then he shut his mouth. To his side, the three sisters had this worried expression as they looked straight at him.

Seeing such a lovable sight his chest became hot and *\*chu\** a wet sound of kissing resounded as he gave the three of them a kiss each.

It was only a brief kiss, but it was a kiss that melted their hearts.

The three of them were surprised and moved deeply.

“Because this will be our first family conference that will decide our future together, I will be happy if you girls let me hear your opinions on the matter”

“““Yes!”““

“Oh, that seems kinda wonderful”

Akiha felt admiration when seeing such a spectacle. Taiyou looked at her and said this...

“There is..... Probably no need for me to ask why you’ve come here right”

“Of course”

After seeing Akiha nod her head, Taiyou turned his attention to Aoba. Looking at her straight in the eyes with a serious face.

Aoba faltered and slightly stirred.

Just now he had kissed those three girls and now he was looking right at me, what is he planning on doing I wonder? That was the kind of worried expression she had on her face.

In a certain meaning she was worried for her chastity, but Taiyou had no intentions of the sort.

Still with the serious look on his face he asked Aoba.

“What about you, what do you plan to do in the end?”

“Eh?”

“Just a little while ago, I visited your parent’s house, and spoke a bit with your three mothers. I felt somewhat angry when I was there, and I’ve come to comprehend a little bit about why you left home”

The moment Taiyou said this, it was like a series of events started that made Aoba once again sink in a depressed state. Although he felt guilty seeing such a face, it was definitely a necessary factor to discuss so he continued onwards.

“The me right now, has a moderate amount of power, and whilst I am capable of sheltering you, it would be inappropriate to continue this forever right? If you just run away from home without any sort of goals, sooner or later you will arrive at the northern provinces or at the bottom of hells door”

“What are you..... Trying to say?”

“A purpose”

Taiyou raised his index finger.

“What do you desire?”

“I.....”

Aoba looks downwards. Biting on to her lower lip, it seems like she was trying to endure something desperately.

“Hey you, aren’t you being a little hard on her?”

Akiha spoke up.

“I already avoided my harshest manner of speaking though “

“What’s with that? Your harshest manner of saying it?”

“I have it open, so why not enter my harem—”

—Pan! (*Slap!*)

Before Taiyou was able to complete his words, a dry sound echoed.

The moment the word “Harem” came out of his mouth, Aoba rapidly lifted her face and swung the palm of her hand. Aoba who has just slapped him had tears accumulate in the corner of her eyes. Just like Taiyou said, to Aoba right now, this was the harshest way of speaking to her.

“You can be relieved, I had no intentions of saying that. In fact, in the present situation—”

Breaking off what he was going to say Kohaku spoke out.

“That’s true, the you right now is unwilling to invite her to your family jyana”

“.....We also think the same”

“Although we really wish to create a harem”

“It’s not okay to include just anybody”

Kohaku started it off and the three sisters followed through. People who knew the girl’s personalities would be surprised that they would have such an opinion.

“I know it already, after all I’m just a burden.....”

“That’s not really what I was getting at, well that’s not the point anyways. My question is, what do you want to do?”

“Even if you ask me what I want to do, I.....”

“Let’s arrange all the information that I currently know. In your house there are four adults, one man and three women in his harem. Up until now, you’ve managed to deal with it somehow, but this time around he plans on obtaining another woman into his harem, moreover this girl is a high-school girl. Because of this you’ve gotten mad and left home. Am I correct up to here?”

“Only four people? If you count the amount of concubines and mistresses he has had my father has even more than that you know?”

“We aren’t talking about your situation where it’s almost like an aristocratic household, so please be quiet for now”

Yurikago interrupted their conversation and Taiyou rejected her input, before asking Aoba again.

“So how about it, what do you want to do?”

“.....”

“Do you want to ruin this new fourth girl? Although I don’t know who she is if we do enough investigation we can probably do something about it. At worst, we can just make her disappear”

“Tha—”

Aoba was going to rebut his words but she swallowed down her own words and looks down again.

“However, even if we did something like that you would only escape your worst case scenario, isn’t that right? You told me that you hated people who cheat, and that you’ve endured the environment at home for years. Even if this fourth girl disappears, all that will happen essentially is that you will avoid the worst scenario but you will still revert to a level of environment that you could barely live in previously. Even so, if you wish for it I can lend you a helping hand, if that is what you truly wish for”

“.....”

“Miyagi-san!”

When he called out her name in a large voice, her body shuddered and with a frightened expression she looked towards Taiyou’s face.

“If you stay silent like that I won’t know what you want, right now I’m asking you what you want to do? Are you planning on just running away forever, never solving the root of the problem itself?”

“I... That’s not.....”

“Miyagi Aoba!”

“Hii”

This time he called out her full name, when he did, she finally looked straight at him, with a scared expression..... or a surprised expression on her face.

“Please, let me hear what you really want to do”

He spoke in a strong manner as if urging her to answer. He looked straight into her eyes as he spoke.

In that moment, a variety of expressions flashed by Aoba’s face.

Complex emotions surged into her mind, and those thoughts became expressions on her face.

Finally, a face of resignation and acceptance showed and staggeringly she began to talk while partly sobbing.

“I..... want to know who my real mother is.....”

This was the desire that is she has had for many years.



## CHAPTER 75

### **THE THIRD BRIDE/ THE EMOTIONS DEEPER WITHIN**

---

The three sisters had their eyes wide open, and Yurikago faintly moved her eyebrows. Akiha had an expression of sympathy on her face, while Kohaku let out a sigh because Aoba finally said what she wanted to say.

—-I want to know who my real mother is.

This was a shadow that had been following Miyagi Aoba around and has tormented her over the years.

When Taiyou visited the Miyagi household and heard their story, he had a feeling that this was the case.

Taiyou speculated that there were two reasons for Aoba as to why she left home, the first was that it was purely because her father wanted to increase the amount of his lovers by one. The second possible reason was that it acted as a fuse for a deep seated problem that has been bothering her since a long time ago.

He didn't know which one it was, but he thought that the second reason was more likely.

It turned out that it was just as Taiyou had expected. Having a new woman being added to the harem and someone new that she had to call mother was just an excuse for her to get angry. Because of this opportunity to make an excuse, the thing that troubled her for so many years exploded.

Aoba started to cry, letting out a loud voice as tears streamed down her face.

Taiyou just let her cry as much as she desired. Although the three sisters couldn't stand it any longer and was going to try to comfort Aoba, Kohaku gently stopped them.

After letting her emotions out and crying bitterly, she was finally able to calm down, that's when Taiyou started to talk to her again.

“You truly want to find that out don’t you?”

“.....Yeah”

“If you later find out that amongst those three women, that none of them is your real mother, are you sure you won’t regret this decision?”

Hearing Taiyou’s words, Aoba’s body shook as she trembled.

Although she seemed scared, her face did not show an expression of shock. She herself had probably imagined such a possibility.

“For her to not have a real mother” (*Kotone*)

“Is there really such a thing?” (*Suzune*)

“Then Miyagi-san will—” (*Kazane*)

“This is just a possibility, in Miyagi-san’s case just thinking about it there are four potential patterns to this scenario. Her real mother can either be: A, B, C or option D neither any of them” (*Taiyou*)

“Strictly speaking if it was in fact option D, it could be further split into a category of someone that it is someone she is acquainted with or someone totally unknown, but that’s probably something to talk at a later date jyana” (*Kohaku*)

“Yeah, well these are just the potential possibilities” (*Taiyou*)

After understanding it a little more, the three sisters turned their gazes towards Aoba as Taiyou asked her the question again.

“If you want me to investigate this, there is a possibility that you might dig out something you don’t want to see. Therefore, let me ask once again, do you really wish to know?”

Saying this, Taiyou looked straight at Aoba. His eyes were like a further reminder.

Aoba hesitates a little bit but then she looked towards him.

“I want to know who my real mother is, I really want to know”

“Aoba, if you find out later that amongst those three mothers, none of them is your real mother, what are you going to do?”

Her closest friend Akiha asked the question. Normally she has a carefree atmosphere but you could tell that it was now filled with concern.

“I don’t know, but I still want to know”

“I see”

“I understand, if you’ve decided that then I will do everything in my power to help”

“B-but how are you going to do such a thing?”

“The first step is to take a DNA test, well this much is obvious though. But if we were to take this approach, how long would it normally take for the results to get back?”

Turning towards Kohaku, he asked her the question. Out of everyone here, she probably had the most knowledge, besides just a little while ago, she was involved in a project that was related to genes and genetic material so Taiyou thought that there is a large possibility that should would know about DNA testing as well.

As was expected, she answered him back promptly.

“In my approximation, it will take around ten days to finish, needing to wait for your turn and filling out the official documents, also the time it would take to mail the results to us jya”

“Is there a faster method?”

“Umu, well if you spend a large sum of money, you can avoid all those processes and just obtain the results of the test right there on the spot jya. However, the problem lies in a different place”

“What do you mean?”

“When you hear about DNA testing, what kind of thing, or what do you think is the method of testing jya?”

“Well... I thought that it was getting the hair of the person and then using that piece of DNA to perform the test, am I wrong?”

“Strictly speaking it is a little different from that, we can still use hair but that is not the best alternative. The best is if you can gather the saliva from that person and use that perform the test jya”

“The saliva..... from that persons mouth?”

“That’s right jya”

“.....”

Taiyou looks down and had a thoughtful look.

He was thinking that if it was as simple as requiring a person’s strand of hair, then even if it may be a little troublesome to obtain, it wasn’t necessarily going to be a hard task.

However, if you were to try an obtain a person’s saliva from within their mouth then it was an entirely different story. Unlike just sneaking into someone’s house and stealing a strand of their hair, collecting someone’s saliva wasn’t that easy.

“Must we really do it like that though?”

“If you want to do this, don’t you want the results to be absolutely accurate jyaro?”

“.....That’s true”

Taiyou nodded his head as he agreed with Kohaku.

If you were to perform a DNA test and the results of the test were ambiguous then there would be no point in making the test in the first place.

Especially with the possibility that “neither three of them” are her real mothers, he wanted to avoid an unclear result if at all possible.

Taiyou was thinking of a method in order to obtain the saliva from their mouths.

Naturally the answer didn’t come to him that quickly, in fact he was quite troubled as

to what he should do. At any rate, it was the child that wanted to confirm who their real parents are... He couldn't really just ask the women to cooperate with him and give him a sample of their saliva... thus, there is really not much choice other than to do it stealthily or obtain the sample by force.

Doing it stealthily was difficult and so Taiyou could only think of methods that involved doing it forcibly. However, if he did it forcefully then regardless of Aoba being able to find the results, she might end up damaging her current relationship with her mothers.

And so he was desperately trying to find a method in order not to do that.

"I know of a method that will increase the accuracy of the results even if we use hair as the sample"

The person who interrupted and suggested this idea was Yurikago.

Because this was a matter that didn't really involve her, she had just been quietly observing however, unable to stand it any longer she butted in the conversation.

"Is that really true?"

Grabbing on to her words as if they were a string that could let him escape hell, he determinedly asked her back.

"Yeah, although it is just a faint memory, I'm not talking about the hair itself, but the white part at the tip of the roots, if you used that part then I heard the results will be much more accurate"

"The white part at the tip of its roots... I see"

Taiyou murmurs the words that Yurikago spoke like a parrot. Although this was also slightly more difficult than just getting any strand of hair, it was not something that he couldn't do sneakily.

"With this method, will the results be out quickly as well?"

"Yes, because the person doing the tests will be affiliated with the Junishima family, I can introduce you guys"

“Thank you”

Giving his thanks to Yurikago the discussions was settled for the time being.



Late at night in Taiyou’s Castle.

Just when the clock strikes midnight, Taiyou felt a certain presence outside. The three sisters were sleeping peacefully and he gave each of them a kiss on the forehead. After tucking them in and making sure they wouldn’t get cold by covering them with a thin towel blanket, he quietly got out of the bedroom without making any noise.

The living room terrace did not have any lights on, but moonlight was shining and Aoba’s figure could be seen.

She was sitting on the sofa, and just looking at something. It wasn’t like she was looking at anything in particular, she was just absentmindedly staring into space.

Taiyou approached her slowly and called out to her.

“You still not asleep?”

“Natsuno-kun”

Taiyou was a little shocked. Aoba was calling out to him in such a soft tone of voice.

Since the first time her talked to her, this was the calmest reaction he ever got from her.

At the very least he wasn’t just rejected immediately, therefore Taiyou sat down next to her.

“What were you doing out here?”

“I was just thinking about some things”

After saying that she stopped talking. Taiyou wanted to know what she was thinking about but he didn’t press her for an answer.

“Natsuno-kun, can I ask you something?”

“Ahh, ask me anything”

“Nastuno-kun, who do you like the most?”

“You asked me this question before haven’t you?”

Taiyou showed a bittersweet smile as he remembered that she had once reprimanded him while asking such a question. At that time, he couldn’t answer her properly and she got really angry. And now, the answer he gave may make her even more angry than before.

“Do you really want to hear the truth?”

“Yeah, let me hear it”

“For this matter..... my answer is probably, that it isn’t one of them”

“Eh?”

Aoba was surprised and it was a reaction he expected.

“If you were to ask me who she is, then it will be a little difficult to explain. To be honest I don’t even know her real name. I only know of her nickname, or perhaps it was an alias. Well, the girl I like the most right now is not, Kotone, Suzune, Kazane or even Kohaku-san, it was this girl”

“Do the other girls know about this as well?”

“Yes, they are aware of it. Or more like...”

Taiyou continued to speak...

“Kohaku-san told me this when we first began our relationship, she told me that ” she didn’t trust a man who claimed that he could love every woman equally” “

“What do you mean?”

Aoba looked at him with astonishment.

“Equality is only an illusion, human beings are partial creatures. A man who says otherwise is someone she cannot trust. Rather than saying something like that, she preferred that I let her know how much I like on every separate occasion. I’m sure that she has thought deeply and experienced many things out in her life to be able to reach that kind of conclusion. That was just how much she denied the superficial connotation of the word “equality” “



## CHAPTER 76

# THE THIRD BRIDE/ IT IS STILL TOO EARLY TO DREAM ABOUT IT

---

Hearing his words Aoba held her tongue, and she thought about young looking old woman who was here just moments ago, she then showed a surprised expression.

“Well, whatever happened in Kohaku-san’s past, that was exactly what she told me. Kotone, Suzune and Kazane also have similar thoughts in the matter. If it was the three girls, they had an even more straightforward way of putting it for me”

“Therefore, you came to like this other different girl more?”

“Yeah”

Taiyou leaned back on his sofa and looked high up into the ceiling.

“Although the order is different”

“The sequential order?”

“Yes the order. According to what the girls are telling me and what they want, I’ve decided myself that “I cannot treat them all in exactly the same way”. However, as a matter of course I still treasure them all individually and that is the main premise of our current relationship. I’ve also decided to stop feeling guilty about it”

“Feelings of guilt?”

Aoba was getting caught up in her own thoughts and she had a complicated look on her face.

“Although I may be mistaken in thinking like this...”

He started off with this... before continuing.

“But you told me once before that I was a cheater right?”

“Uuu.....”

Gulping down her breath, Aoba flinched.

Surely he’s not planning on bringing that up? That was the kind of expression she had.

“Ah no no, I’m not trying to blame you or anything. I’d be lying if I said I wasn’t bothered by it, however, but knowing your circumstances I don’t plan to blame you. My point is, the premise of “cheating” is that you “hide” your infidelity, right? So for instance, if you hid this information from your wife or your girlfriend that would clearly be considered as “cheating”“

“Yeah, that’s true”

“In my case, Kotone and the girls they were already aware... that Kohaku was going to become one of my lovers. And they told me that, they wanted me to have fun with Kohaku-san..... And also go on dates and stuff. If I had to sneak around and did things like this behind their backs without telling them... Then at that time, I myself would have a very terrible sense of guilt. For me to keep them in the dark about it... perhaps I could not even endure the sense of guilt and it would devour me. I don’t know about how other guys would feel about this, but I am like so. Definitely”

“Yes...”

“If you were to ask..... Kohaku-san had many things to say in regards to these matters”

Saying this Taiyou began to imagine Kohaku’s appearance within his own mind. And his chest was filled with reminiscent feelings.

“—Feelings of guilt is self-explanatory, it is the bad feeling you get when you know that you’ve done something wrong. Then in that case, what is the crime you committed? Is it cheating? No, it’s not, that is just one of the ways that you can name it and it isn’t really the true nature of the action. In this case the true nature of the action would be that a crime is committed due to having a fun time with Kohaku-san”

Cutting his words there, he was imagining it in his mind.

He imagined the guilt he would feel for having an affair with Kohaku and then keeping the three sisters in the dark.

It would be twice as punishing as the actually happy time he experienced and it would cause him more pain than pleasure.

Even just by imagining it in his mind right now, Taiyou chest tightened and he felt tormented.

Without letting her see his pain, he continued to talk to Aoba.

“Naturally, doing something like that would make me feel pained, but that’s not the end of it. If I were to think about all the moments we spent together as a crime, I wouldn’t be able to bear the thought of it. I mean don’t you think so too? If you were to believe that spending time with the person you love is actually a crime and have a guilty conscience about it, there is something fundamentally wrong with that”

“.....”

“Therefore I decided, not matter who I was spending my time with, I would completely immerse myself and enjoy the moment, even if that means that I am neglecting someone else in that time period. I decided that feeling guilty while spending time with a person is something that I must not do”

“But if you do that, I think that it’s a little cruel. I mean, if you were to be like that, then when you were enjoying yourself with someone, there is also someone else that is bound to be feeling lonely”

“That may be so. In that case, I will just have to spend time with the person who was feeling lonely and make them feel happy”

“But you also said, that you didn’t believe in equality, didn’t you?”

“Yeah, I did say that. But the thing is”

Taiyou was grinning.

“I didn’t say that that I could not love one person more than another, right?”

“You mean to say.....?”

Aoba had a face that stated that she didn’t understand the sentence he just spoke.

“For instance today I will love Kohaku-san, tomorrow I will love the three sisters, the day after if Kohaku is feeling lonely I will love her again, in three days time—— and it goes on”

“Is that..... like a bubble that you need to continue blowing?”

“Kind of like that, but if the bubble pops, all I need to do is make a new bubble. If doing this the bubble bursts or if I burst the bubble, it is still fine, that’s how I’d like to think about it”

“I think that your self-confidence is weird”

“Well, it’s probably because I’m announcing my determination right now”

It couldn’t be helped, Taiyou lifted his palms in the air and exaggeratedly lifted his shoulders.

“—eh, I think that we’ve really gone off topic. What were we talking about initially?”

Scratching his head Taiyou tried to recall the beginning of their conversation.

“That’s right, I remember now, you were asking me about who my favourite was”

“No, don’t worry about that anymore”

“You sure?”

Without saying anything Aoba just nods her head.

She was just absentmindedly brooding about something.

Looking at her be like this, Taiyou was thinking...

Was my story able to convey something? Was my answer able to help at least a little in regards to what she was brooding about?

Taiyou didn’t know for sure, after all Aoba was now in the midst of a very difficult time, and right now he was probably one of the ingredients that could worsen her difficult time.

After all, he was the man who was aiming to have “Seven wives”. Even if he was accused of being even more atrocious than her own father who was aiming for his fourth wife, he wouldn’t be able to say anything in return.

If he thought about it, it was probably the best option to just deceive her..... yes, it was the most optimal choice... and yet.

Taiyou was going to answer everything with complete honesty. It might provoke her thoughts, and it may cause her to intensely reject his ideals, but he had already determined himself to tell her the truth.

However, you couldn’t really say that there was no profit to telling her the truth.

A hot flame burnt in Taiyou’s chest as he thought how he was going to explain things to her.

He simulated what he was going to say inside of his own head.

When he did this, he had the urge to just go straight to the girls and do exactly as he imagined.

It wasn’t like he was trying to avoid a sense of guilt; neither was he doing this out of obligation.

It was just his pure emotions of wanting to be with them. He wanted to see their happy faces.

Kotone, Suzune Kazane and also Kohaku.

He imagined them being happy, their smiles and their blushing cheeks. According to the circumstances, they could be shedding tears of joy, but if it was those kinds of tears, he wouldn’t mind seeing them every single day.

Eventually, the communication between him and Aoba ended with him being able to reaffirm his current beliefs and he was the only know who benefited out of the conversation.

As is expected, Aoba was thinking about her own sense of guilt in all of this, and she realized she was going into a depressed state so she quickly put a stop to those

thoughts and shook her head in a hurry. Aoba who was just thinking about things in silence finally began to speak.

“Natsuno-kun, you really resemble my father”

“Eh?”

Taiyou became speechless.

“I’m sorry, my words was insufficient. You are like my father, you do the same things that my father does, that’s what I meant. The things you just said, are seriously similar to my dad, and it just got me thinking”

“.....So what is your father like?”

Taiyou was incredible interested in hearing what she had to say in regards to this. Thinking about it properly, several hours ago, when he just left Miyagi’s house, it showed him the possibility of what his life may be like in the future.

If she was able to give any details in regards to this matter, there was no way that he wouldn’t be interested.

“My dad... I’ve never seen him ever apologizing to my mothers”

“Hm?”

Inclining his head, Taiyou was a little bit confused as he tried to digest what she was saying.

“I even think you guys... do the same things. Instead of apologizing, my dad would make up for it by making them happy. My mother, mama and Okaasama, he would love the three of them dearly and this was very obvious from his actions”

“I see”

“And the thing is, I think I can understand it now. I think that my father doesn’t really think that I am all that important. I think that of course as his daughter he thinks that I’m adorable..... but, I don’t think that he values me as someone of importance”

“.....”

“It got me thinking and, it may be possible that I’m not even father’s real child”

“That is.....”

Taiyou started to talk but then shut his mouth. There was no point in comforting her with petty words, thinking this was the case he swallowed those petty words and changed what he was going to say.

“If we appraise the dna we will be able to find out. Rather than guessing this and that, it is much better to just appraise it properly so that we can clarify all the facts”

“Yeah, you’re right”

Agreeing with him, Aoba closes her eyes.

She was just making all kinds of expressions by herself. Her facial expression keeps changing, and a variety of deep thoughts were probably going through her mind.

Taiyou did not really have any words that he could say. At least for now that is.

After a short while, her eyes open and she looks straight at Taiyou.

“Natsuno-kun, can I ask you something?”

For some reason, Taiyou’s heart was beating and he was a little startled.

Aoba was showing him a gentle smile that she’s never showed before.

“Natsuno-kun can you tell me more, about this person that you like the most?”

# CHAPTER 77

## THE THIRD BRIDE/ CHALLENGED TO A FIGHT

---

“Uuuooohhhhh!”

The tip of the sword which was approaching him was frantically being avoided. A dark grey colored flash of light splits the air every time the sword is swung, the scent of death spreads as the sword skims past his nose.

Natsuno Taiyou was holding his ground, making a fist he stepped forward.

In order to gain victory — He went onwards.

He was going towards the “Reverse Heavenly Reversal” sword which was normally concealed in the white girl’s breast pocket. <sup>1</sup>

Taking a lower posture to adjust to the height of the small-sized girl, Taiyou launched a body blow with his fist.

\*Buuuooon\* Just from the sound that tore up the air, it was obvious that the fist he launched reached a terrifying power that was akin to a one-hit kill technique.

If she was to get hit by something like this, it wouldn’t be strange if her body was blown away towards the skies or perhaps it would be enough to create a hole in the center of her body.

That’s if she got hit...

The girl did not get hit.

Taiyou’s punch hits the empty air and his full power swing did not land on its target.

He was astonished at the scene before him, the white girl who was supposed to be right in front of him just several moments ago had completely disappeared, there was only her lingering fragrance remaining.

“That’s..... my..... Residual afterimage”



“—— ! ”

Taiyou reacted to the voice coming from his rear as cold sweat dripped down his forehead. Pivoting his leg across the ground, he turns around and launches another body blow punch.

Thunk!

He felt an impact —— but he couldn't swing his fist any further.

His fist had been stopped by the Reverse-Heaven blade. It was like he hit into some kind of thick wall, or perhaps it was better described as the feeling of hitting the hard ground.

No, for someone like Taiyou, walls can easily be pierced, and a crater as big as a sumo wrestling ring could be formed out of the ground.

He had that much power in his punch.

In other words, the girl who was able to stop his punch without any difficulty with her sword must have a power that exceeds his own.

“Free form—”

The girl mutters in a subdued voice. Her eyes were saying something.

Faster than he could think, a dreadful feeling ran up his spine.

It was killing intent.

The white girl's killing intent was literally her resolute will of being prepared for death.

This is the third time he's ever felt this feeling, and it made him want to just turn his back and run away.

“Star Fire being set ablaze, technique “

“—— ! ”

However, he endured it. He endured this overwhelming and absolutely terrifying killing intent.

Gritting his teeth, he firmly placed his feet on the ground.

—Taking one step forward.

The girl's eyes slightly opened wide, and she was indeed surprised that Taiyou was able to take that step forward.

The technique she just performed was done after she put her sword back in its sheath; it was probably connected to the art of sword drawing, an iaido kind of technique.

She was able to pull her sword out of her sheath so fast that she was able to interrupt the trajectory of his arm.

Pashi.

A small sound echoes and the girl's arm hit against Taiyou's body. Using her free arm, she dealt a blow to his body.

Naturally, he didn't receive much damage. It was a pain similar to being hit by a cardboard and was slapped really hard with it.

"Haah!"

Again, he threw another fist at her.

Taiyou didn't have any special techniques, his only arsenal was using his full power to perform a punch.

Instead, if someone were to be grazed by this destructive strike, the shockwaves alone were enough to send you flying away— it was a one-hit kill technique.

Taiyou's strategy and tactics for battle revolved around being able to land a single hit of this punch.

All his movements were for that purpose.

However, he could not land a single one.

His fist which was launched in the same manner was avoided in the same manner as it hit the empty air.

A sensation of the blood vessels in his fingertips ripping assailed him.

The girl instantly moves and in the next instant she was already right next to Taiyou's chest.

Taiyou closes the gap in a rough manner taking big steps forward \*Za Za\*, whereas the girl took gentle and fluid steps \*Su Su\*.

Her steps didn't even cause the air flow to change, but at the same time she moved with extreme speed.

In fact, Taiyou's eyes could not even recognize that she had already stepped away from him in an instant.

For him, every time he swung his fist it was like he was hitting an illusion or some kind of mirage.

"Free form–"

The girl mutters and placing the sword back in its sheath, she swung towards his chest.

"Pure stone piercing, technique"

Shakin! Dosu!

An impact came from the pointed end of the sheath that directly touched his skin.

The shock from the blow runs through his body and the piercing pain was almost enough to make him lose consciousness instantly, taking two steps back he was staggering on his feet.

The attacks did not end there.

"Power..... U... p"

The white girl makes a small victory pose as she spoke in her unique way.

In the next moment, her figure disappeared from in front of his eyes.

“—Behind!”

He couldn't see anything nor feel anything. She literally just vanished from his field of vision in an instant.

Taiyou used his judgement which was based on his past experiences fighting her that she would be sneaking behind him.

Without any hesitation, he turned around and put all his energy into the punch.

Once, twice and a third time, he swung his fist as it splits the cool air.

However, there was nobody there.

“Over, here. Behind you..... be-hind”

The girls voice was always behind him every time she spoke.

In the next moment, he was struck on the crown of his head.

“Ouch owow..... As expected, I can't beat you.”

Taiyou was sitting cross-legged on the ground of the park in the morning as he began to rub the back of his head. A numbing pain and a little bump appeared where he was hit in the head.

A little bit away from him, Shirokiyami was wearing long sleeves even though this was still summer, she was in her usual goth loli fashion clothes and she extended a helping hand towards him.

“But, you've..... gotten strong-er. way more than, bef-ore”

“You think so?”

“Yes, and..... as expected, you are an irregu-larity. Even though you look like this, your power and speed are...”

“Heyy, what's wrong with the way I look? Eh? You said my speed improved as well?”

“Yeah, you’ve become fas-ter”

“Did I.....?”

While still rubbing the back of his head, Taiyou was thinking. Right now his speed was stuck at a value of 29, but it seemed to be a speed that was able to receive Shirokiyami’s recognition.

Indeed, it would seem that as he continued to increase his level, he also became stronger.

Although he wasn’t able to win against her, on the contrary, Taiyou actually gained a boost to his confidence.

“By the way, I’m just wondering but how long do you think it will be before I can win against you?”

“Just now, I..... Powered, up”

“Ahh, you did”

“I can do that... at least three more, times”

“Doesn’t that make it seem impossible, oi?! Or more like, you must be joking about that, right?”

Taiyou’s voice raised unintentionally. If her words were true, the only way he would ever be able to beat her is if some sovereign emperor from outer space came to this world and killed his best friend, and in his anger he manages to power up drastically.

“Yeah... I’m lying”

“I thought so–”

“In reality I can power up another seven times”

“That’s even worse ain’t it?!”

“Right now..... I’m using around 20 percent of my power”

“.....Are you serious?”

“Seriously, serious”

Taiyou breathed out a sigh. That’s because at this rate, he didn’t know what he needed to achieve in order to defeat her.

One of the end goals for Taiyou is to beat her in a fight and obtain her. <sup>2</sup>

Right now this particular goal just suddenly seemed like it was so far away.

“But, the rate at which you become stronger... is strange. So much so that I wish, you would tell me the sec-ret”

“It’s love”

Taiyou spoke out decisively. That’s because, he felt like it was not yet the right time to tell her about Hera.

“Really?”

Shirokiyami nodded her head calmly. It wasn’t easy to get a read on what she was thinking.

For the time being, he decided that this was enough.

In addition to his strength, she had also recognized his improvement in speed.

It was kind of like when an adult patted a child’s head telling them “You’ve grown really fast”, that was the kind of praise that Shirokiyami was giving him and for now he decided that this was good enough.

What he was afraid of the most was if he “worked extremely hard and yet it was completely unrelated to his results”. No matter if it was the him before or the him right now, he still thought in this manner.

As long as he could gain experience and increase his level and was guaranteed to become stronger, no matter if this process was a grueling or a dull process, he would not mind it at all.

Sooner or later... As long as he was able to become strong enough to defeat her in the end, this would be good enough for him.

Right now there is no need to become impatient.

(Hopefully, at least my feelings are conveyed.)

“Umm, Natsuno..... kun?”

The voice coming from his side was something he was becoming accustomed to hearing, but for some reason it sounded a little puzzled this time around.

When he turned around, Aoba’s figure could be seen. Her hair was tied up in her trademark straight ponytail. She was in her casual clothes wearing a striped t-shirt with a matching light blue skirt.

However, her face was clearly filled with bewilderment. Seeing this Taiyou realized that he had not yet introduced them to each other.

“Sorry, sorry, we suddenly entered into combat so I totally forgot. I haven’t introduced you guys yet. She’s the girl I spoke about last night, the one “I like the most”.”

“Pleased to meet you, I’m a bride, candidate”

Shirokiyami made her self-introductions, and Taiyou was surprised at what she just said.

“Eh, are you going to admit that you are one of my candidates?”

“A candidate, is a candidate..... But judging from how things went today..... you certainly will be rejected, for cert-ain”

“I thought so”

Taiyou became slightly teary-eyed, he understood that he was nowhere close to reaching her standards, but hearing her say it like that still made him sad. He endured these feelings and swallowed it down before turning to Aoba once again.

For some reason or another, Aoba had this really complicated look on her face.

- 
1. Reverse Heavenly Reversal is Shirokiyami's treasured sword which she manages to somehow keep hidden on her body, furthermore since her naming sense is ridiculous, the sword takes on a comical name. I think that when she was naming her sword she wanted to view her sword as something that could fight against and reverse the fate from the heavens.
  2. Shirokiyami is only willing to marry the man that is capable of defeating her



# CHAPTER 78

## THE THIRD BRIDE/ WELCOME HOME KISS

---

Aoba's eyes widened with amazement.

The scene before her eyes was too unexpected because it was so unusual. As if there was a screen, the feeling was similar to wearing 3D glasses in a movie theater.

She was nothing more than a mere high school girl. To her, it was the type of superhuman battle that could only be seen in manga or movies.

The white-haired, goth-loli girl was even better. Although it was her first time seeing such a person, she had... this atmosphere around her.

However, even Taiyou could not grasp the superhuman movements.

"How can they move so fast? How did that punch make a "buuooon" sound? "

As far as Aoba was concerned, Natsuno Taiyou was a cheating man until now, a mere classmate.

A quibbler who liked games and an ordinary boy who didn't stand out in class. That was the image of the boy called Taiyou.

She saw a guy like that challenging Shirokiyami, although she really had never heard of such a superhuman battle (or anything such as that.....)

Each time he closed in on Shirokiyami while appearing to swing his fist, a strange feeling welled up within her heart. A vague yet strangely exciting feeling rose in her chest.

As she was surmising about what was happening, Taiyou took a barrage of blows from the sheath of the sword, and admitted defeat.

That's when she headed towards there.

"What's wrong Miyagi, why do you have such a face? Ah, were you astonished that such

an event started suddenly?”

“eh, yea...”

It wasn’t just that but that also was it.

For the time-being, Aoba vaguely nodded and turned towards Shirokiyami.

“Nice to meet you, I’m Miyagi Aoba. You?”

She held out her hand for a handshake as she asked for her name.

“Nice to... meet you”

Shirokiyami returned the handshake, however she did not give her name.

Aoba reluctantly began a different conversation because there was no sign that Shirokiyami was going to speak while shaking hands.

“um... are you in Natsuno-kun’s harem?”

“it’s arranged, however..... undecided”

Despite wondering about what that probably meant, she asked more questions.

“Do you like Natsuno-kun?”

“Yes”

An immediate reply was returned following this response.

“Is that so!?”

“Why are you surprised Natsuno-kun?”

“No, it just seemed like there was no way... that could be...”

Taiyou said, while gazing at Shirokiyami with eyes full of anticipation.

“yes, defeat me... quick... ly”

“Ah, I surely will defeat you!”

Shirokiyami nodded. Aoba was not understanding the relationship between those two more and more. Afterwards, various things were discussed, but it only resulted in Aoba becoming more aware of her mysteriousness.

“Is that so?”

Suddenly, Taiyou clapped his hands together as if he remembered something.

“I was going to forget to hand this to you!”

He then held out a rectangular item that was wrapped in a white cloth to Shirokiyami.

Aoba thought it was something similar to a candy box.

“This... is?”

“I’m returning some of it because I’ve become more successful”

“.....did you?”

“Including giving that to you, I also wanted to have a discussion this time, about how to increase more of this.”

“I under... stand”

Shirokiyami nods, showing that she understood.

“Then, I recommended..... FX”<sup>1</sup>

“If I do that, I’ll lose all the money!”

Taiyou raised his voice.

“I didn’t know you knew about stuff like that. I was thinking more along the lines of how I can be more powerful like you”

“...Are you sure?”

Shirokiyami said while squinting at Taiyou.

In that moment, Aoba felt a chill run down her back, however she did not show it.

“Yeah”

“...I... under-stand”

Both of them communicated similarly by nodding to each other.

Aoba had a strange feeling while watching two people like them.

Taiyou Castle.

Parting with Shirokiyami, Aoba and Taiyou returned so that the three sisters could prepare breakfast. All of the residents of this house, including Yurikago and Aoba, had stayed at Taiyou’s Castle last night. It seemed somewhat like a small dinner party comprising of seven people.

Since the three sisters; Aoba, and Taiyou were going to school afterwards, they were dressed in their uniforms; while Kohaku and Yurikago dressed in plain clothes.

Taiyou and his wives sat beside each other while the two guests, Aoba and Yurikago were sitting horizontally.

“Is that so? You immediately challenged her jyana?”

“Indeed, however, I wasn’t really a match for her. On the contrary, I must admit that she went easy on me.”

“Are you ok Taiyou-san?”

“Did you get hurt when you were fighting her?”

“She was using a sword wasn’t she?”

“Yes, but it’s ok, it’s healing. I’m being treated like a child, so it’s probably ok not to worry.”

“If you chase after her, even you could receive an injury jyarona”

“That’s how it was. Furthermore, her speed seemed to have raised as well, according to her. It’s a difficult situation; therefore, I want to raise my speed a bit also.”

Taiyou continued telling the girls about Shirokiyami, while eating the breakfast that the three sisters made.

“What’s wrong? Why do you have that facial expression?”

Yurikago asked Aoba on the side. Until now, the two had little involvement. Yurikago kept quiet but Aoba was surprised and confused.

“No, it’s nothing.”

“You were staring at him so hungrily? What, did you fall for him?”

“kaah!!!”

Aoba’s face turned red as she objected frantically.

“That’s not it! I just think that Natsuno-kun and the others are just strange”

“us?”

Taiyou’s ears reacted to her words. The three sisters and Kohaku stared at Aoba similarly.

“Yes, the woman who I met a while ago who talks funny. “

“It was strange wasn’t it”

Taiyou was not surprised. He realized that it was natural that she would be surprised.

It was certainly understandable following last night’s conversation. He also understood the thing that Aoba was most concerned about.

Up to now, he was not the type of person to purposely flaunt anything. At least, concerning this, he was trying to keep the talk about the other wife candidate a secret.

Regardless, the three sisters had an extremely happy face.

How happy a face did they have? It was the same happy face they had when they did the "have a good day kiss", since they started living together.

Taiyou more actively pursued a harem and because he desired a harmonious one with the girls, he liked a story like that.

If it happened; he could then say he loved the girls with pride, and naturally talk about such things with a happy face.

If he did it like that, for the time being, Aoba only reacted to what he said.

"Do you want to speak happily as well?"

Yurikago said teasingly and made a face as if saying "I know everything".

Aoba's face became bright-red like a crab boiled instantly.

"It's not that!"

"really?"

Yurikago was grinning more and more. Aoba could not endure it any longer and suddenly stood up.

"Thanks for the meal!"

She was angrily returning to her room when she passed in front of Taiyou and glanced towards him. She was concerned about what kind of face Taiyou was making. That led to an accident. While frantically pretending to not look, she became negligent of her feet.

"kyyyaaa!"

Her foot tripped over something and she fell towards Taiyou. Taiyou tried to catch her but his reaction was too late. He held out his arms but her body slipped through right towards Taiyou. She crashed into him with her all of body weight and Taiyou's vision became pitch black.

"Hou"

An amused Kohaku's voice was heard. At the same time, there was a familiar sensation..... The feeling of lips and a slightly sweet fragrance accompanied by a soft touch. When the weight lifted, he opened his eyes. That's when Taiyou could see Aoba holding her lips.

[No way... ] he thought as he traced his lips with his finger. The look on Aoba's face became more and more embarrassed. [This... I kissed her... ] As he was thinking that.

“Taiyou-chan! I'm home nanodesu!”

Did she do it purposefully? As Taiyou was thinking about the extent of the timing, Hera's figure appeared. <sup>2</sup>

- 
1. Forex Trading, it's kind of like buying and selling shares online
  2. Taiyou is wondering if Kohaku purposefully tripped Aoba, considering the timing she probably did

# CHAPTER 79

## THE THIRD BRIDE/ EXPOSED

---

“Taiyou-chan Taiyou-chan! I’ve been looking around for a bit but Taiyou-chan’s Kyaa!!!!  
—”

While Hera was yelling something, Taiyou snatched her out of the air and put her under the couch seat he was sitting on. A struggling voice could be heard from under his butt but he decided to ignore it.

However, it was already too late.

Although it was an accident, he still kissed Aoba.

She now had a completely different look of surprise than the one she showed immediately following the kiss.

She gazed back and forth between Taiyou’s face and his butt.

It was clear that she had noticed Hera from her reaction.

“Natsuno-kun—”

“Woah!, Kotone and her sister’s meals are delicious! Especially this cabbage in the miso soup. I think that if I drink this, the upper-half of my body will become completely nude”<sup>1</sup>

“Just now—”

“It’s delicious, too delicious! Give me a second helping Kazane, I want to eat food made by you for the rest of my life!”

“That voice—”

“Come to think about it, it’s time for the morning soap dramas. You absolutely can’t look down on the recent morning soap dramas!”



Taiyou said in a loud voice while desperately gulping down his meal. He even turned on the TV in order to backup what he was saying.

However, it was a futile effort.

No matter how much he did, Aoba looked at him with eyes as if she was totally convinced of what she saw.

Eventually, she said nothing while her gaze was fixated only on him.

When their eyes met, Taiyou gulped and couldn't catch his breath.

"Husband, maybe it's already too late?"

"Surely you can see that it's pointless to hide it."

"Even now, Hera-chan's voice can still be heard."

"Is she screaming something?"

"I think that it would be better to let her out."

Kohaku, Yurikago, and the three irregular sisters.

One by one, the girls opened their mouth, in order to persuade Taiyou.

Taiyou sighed.

He nodded feebly and tilted his body; thus, releasing Hera from being pinned under his butt.

A blonde fairy immediately flew out and protested to him.

"What are you doing Taiyou-chan!!!? I went through a lot of trouble to think of an amazing idea for Taiyou-chan, only to receive such cruel treatment nanodesu!"

If anyone was suddenly snatched and held between a couch and a butt, naturally there would be complaints. Immediately following Hera's release, she raised both hands and protested furiously. She suddenly stopped speaking once she noticed everyone looking at her.

“Huh? What’s the matter everyone?”

Hera followed everyone’s gaze and realized that even Aoba was closely observing her.

“Oh... has Aoba-chan become able to see me?”

She asked Aoba cheerfully despite sticking out like a sore thumb.



Private School Koen Gakuen High School 1st Year A Group.

Before morning homeroom, Taiyou sat in his seat facing Aoba.

Normally, Hera would sit on top of his desk while being extremely noisy, but now she was unusually quiet.

Although other people could not see her, Taiyou requested that she be quiet, while he explained the complicated story to Aoba. Despite complaining, Hera kept silent in public.

Hera sat between Taiyou and Aoba, who were facing each other.

“In other words——”

After Aoba listened to Taiyou’s explanation until the end, she tried to summarize the story she heard, with an astonished look on her face.

“——What do you mean?”

She immediately held up a white flag.<sup>2</sup>

Although Taiyou considerably simplified his explanation of what happened since he met Hera, Aoba still did not seem to understand or accept it.

Despite the story not advancing any further, Taiyou seemed relieved.

Currently, Hera can be seen by Kotone and her sisters, Kohaku, and Yurikago; which was a total of three people. They all accepted Hera’s existence immediately.<sup>3</sup>

Although she existed right in front of their eyes, Taiyou did not believe that this existence outside of common sense could be accepted very easily.

Thus, he wondered how they could have comprehended it so quickly.

So in this case, he was relieved that Aoba's reaction was refreshingly different from the others.

However, he couldn't afford this to go on much longer. Taiyou decided to explain it more bluntly but with only the phenomenon and the results.

"If I said it's like how the main character of a manga is possessed by a fairy and obtains magical powers, would you understand then?"

"Yeah... I understand, but—"

She said that as she watched Hera. She understood that it was something that could happen in manga. However, she still couldn't accept the fact that Hera existed even though she was right in front of her eyes.

Looking at Aoba's face; Hera smiled, laughed, and waved her hand. Aoba pointed to herself with a confused look.

"Well, in any case, you shouldn't think about it too deeply. Even I do not know why this happened. One day she just suddenly appeared before my eyes."

"Is that so?"

Aoba said as she alternatively looked at Taiyou and Hera.

In the end, she took a deep breath, and calmed herself down.

"Ok, I understand now"

"Do you really understand?"

"I don't understand but for the time being"

"Alright"

Taiyou had a bitter smile. Aoba's reaction was refreshing as expected, and so, he felt relieved once again.

"So from what I've heard from Natsuno-kun's story, she will stay by Natsuno-kun's side now and forever?"

"Yeah..."

Taiyou nodded despite having a confused expression.

"By the way, how long has Hera been around me?"

"She was with us for a good percentage of the time."

"Then, how did I suddenly become able to see her? "

"ugh..."

Taiyou unintentionally groaned as if a sore spot was poked.

He racked his brain trying to figure out how to explain the conditions in order to see Hera.

Considering the details of Hera's first appearance became hazier when he tried to remember, he could not explain that as well.

Taiyou thought of several things, but he arrived to the conclusion that it was impossible to deceive her. He decided to explain instead.

"She can be seen only by people..... who kissed me"

Taiyou told her in a muffled voice so that the surrounding classmates could not hear.

".....Ah!!"

Aoba pressed against her lips.

It seemed that she was clearly remembering the accident that happened during breakfast.

Her face instantly turned red. As a result, Taiyou noticed that the temperature in his face seemed to rise as well.

“...sorry”

After a while, Taiyou bowed his head to her.

Although it was an accident, the fact remained that he still stole a kiss from her. Furthermore, he still hadn't apologized properly for that incident.

Having thought that, Taiyou bowed his head.

“Oh, that was an accident. Therefore, it doesn't count because it was an accident. That's why we'll both forget about it.”

“Is that ok?”

“Yeah, because it was an accident...”

Aoba emphasized that it was an accident. It became severely obvious that she wanted to convey that fact. Regardless, it still could not wipe away his feelings of guilt, but he decided to believe her.

“Huh?”

Suddenly, she raised her voice and seemed to have noticed something. Her eyes opened wider and she had an astonished look on her face.

“What happened!?”

“That twin-tailed girl that was with us since yesterday”

“Oh, Yurikago? What about her? “

“She also... saw Hera... right?”

“...Ah”

Taiyou remembered that morning. Based on Yurikago's words, it was clear to assume that she could also see Hera.

He became extremely troubled while thinking of a way to explain how Yurikago could see Hera.

The first hour of class was like lying on a bed of needles. The contents of the senile teacher's lessons were similar to spell incantations. Not one thing entered Taiyou's head.

Hera also wasn't there. She disappeared somewhere as soon as homeroom was over and the teachers switched.

Taiyou was far away from finding the perfect solution and the cause of the conflict had left.

He glanced at Aoba.

The three sisters who were sitting in separate seats, worried about Aoba as well.

It seemed that Aoba was absent-minded, as if thinking about something, during the entire class. Her hand that was holding the pencil completely stopped, and even her notebook that was far away, was noticeably blank.

Taiyou did not know what she was thinking, and because of that, only the worse guesses crossed his mind.

Someone she was not dating, kissed her, and did not take responsibility for it.

To make matters worse, the conversation that he proudly spoke to her about last night vividly crossed his mind.

Taiyou became ashamed and felt as if he should disappear into a hole.

However, contrary to how he felt...

"Natsuno-kun, will you go home together with me?"

During the break, Aoba came close to him, and asked such a thing.

- 
1. Pretty sure this is possibly a reference from Shokugeki no Souma
  2. This is pretty much stating that she tried, but gave up attempting to summarize his story
  3. Kotone and her sisters are counted as one person

## CHAPTER 80

# THE THIRD BRIDE / HER DETERMINATION

---

“To your house?”

Blinking his eyes, Taiyou was looking up towards Aoba who was standing. Although she looked serious when she spoke, it didn't seem like something that she thought about carefully and calmly.

Having such an invitation delivered with such an expression on her face was something beyond the limit of what Taiyou expected she was going to say. At the very least Taiyou did not predict she would say something like this.

After all she was running away from home right now and the cause of the situation has not even been resolved.

Moreover, they were making plans to resolve the problem in the near future so at the very least, it wasn't necessary for her to go back home right this instant.

Therefore, Taiyou was perplexed and was wondering as to why she would say such a thing.

“Yes, I want you to come together with me”

But before he was able to think any more than this, she unwaveringly uttered the same invitation again with a determined facial expression.

“That is, you just want me to come?”

“Yeah, just Natsuno-kun”

“For what reason?”

Taiyou just asked a natural question. Even though it was obvious that she didn't want to bring him over just to introduce him to his parents, he was still quite wary and was trying to read her intentions for inviting him over.



“.....”

Aoba was keeping quiet and averting her gaze. Thought she wanted him to go with her, she was hesitating on whether or not to tell him the real reason.

And seeing that Taiyou was also hesitating, she was wondering if he wanted to question her reasons.

Although she felt bad if he just came along without knowing anything, at the same time, there weren't any major problems that could arise out of him just following her.

Leaving feelings aside, because he was an outsider to her family's point of view, there wasn't really anything that he could do to make her situation worse.

It was mainly a problem of feelings.

Therefore, she was confused as to what she should do.

“Eh? What are Natsuno-kun and Aoba-chan talking about?”

It was at this moment that a classmate Katsuki Nakajima spoke to break the stagnant atmosphere. He was well known as being sociable and he was the type of person to just jump from group to group and talk to anyone.

Coming to where Taiyou and Aoba was at, Katsuki showed his usual friendly smile, but he also had a slightly surprised face as he asked the question.

“What an unusual combination, since when did you guys get along so well?”

“W-well, thing's just happened this way”

“Huh? Fufun, I see I see”

After nodding his head repeatedly, he started switching his gaze between Taiyou and Aoba. Seeing Katsuki's gaze, both Aoba and Taiyou seemed slightly uncomfortable as it gave them a bad feeling.

Katsuki was a man that was brimming with curiosity, and he could occasionally become too interested in something and would be unable to read the mood. Therefore,

for the current situation, Katsuki was probably the most troublesome fellow to deal with right now.

“I should probably try to change the subject somehow”. Taiyou was thinking about how to do this when...

“““Nakajima-kun, can you come with us for a sec?”““

A voice could be heard from a little place away and Katsuki turned around to it.

When Taiyou also turned himself towards the source of the familiar voice, he saw the figure of the three sisters. The girls were beckoning Katsuki to come towards them.

“Kotone-chan, Suzune-chan and Kazane-chan, what’s up?”

Perhaps because he didn’t really have any major business with Taiyou or perhaps it was because the three sisters who were usually very hard to get in touch with called out to him, but in any case he was merrily walking towards them. His entire face was smiling widely as he danced with joy and walked towards them.

Looking past Katsuki who was in very high spirits, the three sisters gave Taiyou a knowing wink.

It was the kind of look that said, “leave this to us!”.

Taiyou also returned a thankful look towards the girls.

Because they were blushing just a little, he thought that he conveyed his gratitude without trouble.

“Let’s change the place”

Whispering to Aoba, he stood from his seat and left the classroom. Aoba nodded her head silently and subtly followed behind him.

After going out of the classroom, they headed towards a corridor that connected the buildings together. The corridor which linked to the building of club activities was quite empty as long as it was not after school when the club activities began.

After making sure he was in an area that was deserted, he turned around and looked at Aoba.

“If it’s here we should be fine”

“Yeah. We got saved by the three girls didn’t we?”

“I suppose we did, I will make sure to thank them later”

A feeling was welling up in Taiyou. The women who gave him a lifeboat in his time of need made him feel both thankful and he loved them for it. He decided that he would properly thank them later as he swore it in his heart.

“The Hayakawa sisters, somehow resemble mothers”

“You think so?”

Taiyou just went with it without trying to expand the conversation in this regard. Previously, Aoba told him that he resembled a father figure and now she told him that the three sisters resembled a mother figure.

He couldn’t help but to notice that she was probably relating Taiyou’s situation to her own family situation, but right now, her family was in the midst of a big turmoil.

At the very least, it was big enough to cause their daughter to run away from home.

Even when he went to the Miyagi Mansion and talked to her family, there were certain details and circumstances which he could see happening to himself in his own future. After thinking about such things, Taiyou felt awkward and found it hard to sympathize with her.

Therefore, he intended to let the matter pass and change the topic.

“So let me clear it up by asking again. Why did you suddenly want to go back home today? Furthermore, you wanted me to come with you?”

“Well like I told you a little while ago, there was something that I wanted to talk about with my mothers”

“The thing you wish to talk about, do I need to be there for it to work?”

“Is it inconvenient if you... come together with me?”

Aoba doesn't answer his question and just repeated her invitation like she was pleading him.

“It's not like I can't..... but I don't understand why I am needed. I also don't know what you are going to try to say to them. At the very least, I want to know what you plan to do, is that really too much to ask?”

“.....”

Aoba looked downwards and became silent.

Her fingers were fidgety, and she licked her dry tongue to moisten it up.

It was not like she was trying to keep silent, after seeing such actions it was easy to tell that she was conflicted whether or not to tell him the reason.

Therefore, he just waited for her in silence. After a short while, she took in a deep breath and faced him with resolve.

“I want to say to my mothers, that I want to perform a DNA test in order to determine who my real mother is”

“Huh?”

Taiyou knitted his eyebrows. Because her conduct was just so inexplicable, Taiyou's brow was deeply wrinkled.

“Is it necessary to do that?”

“Since yesterday, I've been watching Natsuno-kun and the others, and I've also heard stories from Natsuno-kun”

Saying this, Aoba had an intense look on her face.

“And it got me thinking, if I just secretly did the DNA test without telling my mother's about it... Even if a result does come out, if I did it secretly, I will be sure to experience

feelings of guilt”

“Feelings of guilt...”

As if he was examining the words, he repeated them to himself. He remembered those words from last night to this morning. They were words he said to her several times.

“I..... yeah, it’s true. I really like, love and treasure my mum, mama and mother. They were affectionate to me since I was a child, and even now, I think of all of them as my mothers. For my mothers to hide who the true mother is from me, I think that they must have their own good reasons”

“.....”

“Even so, I really want to know who my true mother is, the woman who gave birth to me. Because Natsuno-kun is willing to cooperate, it has become possible to investigate it. However..... if I secretly investigate behind their backs, I am sure to experience guilt in return. Therefore, I want to meet them face to face and tell them that I will be investigating this issue”

“So basically, you don’t want to hide anything?”

This was also one of the main points of what he discussed with her previously.

And after taking in his own words, she made this decision herself.

Taiyou didn’t know whether this was a bad thing, right thing, wrong thing, or if it was a good thing.

But, there was one thing that he understood clearly.

Coming up front with someone and declaring things honestly, is something that he definitely liked to do.

“I understand, I will go with you”

“Really?”

“Yeah, although this is not what we originally intended, it appears that I am partially

to blame for instigating you to take this action. Therefore, I plan to take responsibility till the end”

“That’s not quite right, you didn’t instigate me. It was not like you spurred me on”

“Is that right?”

Taiyou smiles bitterly as he asked her back but in the next moment, his smile changed into surprise.

“Natsuno-kun opened my eyes. I was always running away and you helped me see clearly”

“Isn’t that a little exaggerated...”

“At least that’s what I believe, is that not good enough?”

Aoba’s face showed no hesitation as she spoke.

Trying to build a harem, Taiyou never thought that what he was doing was the right thing (*although by no means did he ever think he was doing something wrong*). He felt slightly sorry about the fact that he might not be the best influence on her but that was trivial.

Right now, the girl he saw in front of him was a like a totally different person. Since he first met her, this was the happiest expression she ever showed him.

There was no anger in it, no confusion, nor was it a reckless expression.

She had clear eyes, and a bright cheerful smile. Seeing her have such an expression on her face, Taiyou could not say anything more to her.

At the same time the emotions within him... In particular, a feeling which he recently got to experience started to bud.

# CHAPTER 81

## THE THIRD BRIDE / ON BOARD!

---

Even Taiyou was shocked by his sudden infatuation.

“zee..... haa.....”

He was feeling the shock from when he was in the hallway together with Aoba. There was a rise in his pulse and mild throb in his chest. Feelings that undoubtedly meant favor towards the opposite sex—it was love. He could clearly notice that he began to like Aoba. However, that was fine and ok. At this point in time, he did not intend to pose as a virtuous one-woman type of man. The problem was the timing. Taiyou became amazed at himself for beginning to like one girl after another.

“huff..... ha, damn”

“What are you doing Track and Field club— Aren’t you ashamed of running sluggishly!?”

“That’s right, That’s right”

However, Taiyou thought that he no longer had any doubt that he began to like Aoba. Even until now, just by recalling her retreating figure leaving the hallway; his heart began to beat faster and his temperature rose. At first he thought that • • it was that kind of thing. Like the mating season that approached after he had a relationship with the three sisters and Kohaku. The reason he disregarded the feelings was because he thought he merely desired her body. <sup>1</sup>

However, He wanted to embrace, kiss, and love her. Having these types of thoughts indicated that the emotions existed. It doesn’t mean that there was no lust, but it wasn’t entirely lust. He didn’t want just her body; he wanted her heart as well. It could certainly be called greed, and if that was the case, Taiyou thought that he was already in love. He already accepted it. Taiyou decided to think so after repeatedly asking himself.

— Pippi —!

“huh?”

Incidentally, after the thought, he heard an unfamiliar sound. When he looked in the direction of the sound, his eyes opened wide. He saw the P.E teacher in a jersey blowing the whistle.

“Alright, that’s it for now. The girls will get to change their clothes until the break time bell rings and the boys turn will be from break time until class begins. With that said, you’re all dismissed”

The P.E teacher said and quickly walked away. Again, Taiyou surveyed his surroundings. The early summer sunlight increased in strength daily. There was an intense reflection in several places on the school grounds. Including him, the boys from First Year Class A, were mostly assembled there. All of them were wearing gym uniforms. Here and there, there were classmates out of breath and clinging to the ground. Seeing that, Taiyou thought “now that I think about it, weren’t we doing a marathon for P.E class “, without any deep emotion.

“Haah..... Haah..... Natsuno”

“Yes?”

He heard the parched, wheezing voice of a boy next to him. When he turned around, he could see the appearance of a classmate glaring in his direction, with their hands on their knees. His name was Tashika Kazama. Taiyou remembered that he was a celebrity and called the new star of the track and field club.

“Hey, you’re pretty good.....”

“Eh? ah, yea”

Taiyou did not know what it was about but decided to nod for the time being.

“However, I won’t lose next time, remember that”

Kazama left the parting remark and walked away. Taiyou wondered what in the world Kazama meant and began to look completely confused.



“Good job Taiyou-san”

“Here’s a towel”

“Please use it”

After Kazama left, the three sisters with their peculiar way of speaking, came beside him. They spoke in turns based on height only in front of their husband Taiyou and family members. They relaxed around Taiyou the most and constantly spoke in the order of Kotone, Suzune, and Kazane. Those three were wearing the school’s assigned white shirt and blue bloomers, which was regulation for the girls. While looking from their gym sneakers to thighs; their healthy legs which were like a fawn’s were seductive.

Taiyou instinctively put effort into restraining his bottom-half. Otherwise, considering there were many classmates around, he would have exposed his shameful behavior in front of them. Pretending to be calm, he took the towel and wiped off most of the sweat from his face.

“At any rate, Taiyou-san is awesome”

“You defended the boy’s top position until the end”

“It was worthwhile to cheer for you”

“Top?”

Confused at their words, he lowered his towel and turned his gaze. The three sisters had the type of eyes that seemed to be looking at an idol they yearned for, and yet, also like a mother being prideful of her son.

“Yes, it was the top”

“Taiyou-san and Kazama-kun were both in dead heat”<sup>2</sup>

“You were ahead of third place by one lap”

“.....Really?”<sup>3</sup>

Taiyou was muttering like it was completely someone else's problem, as he watched Kazama leaving. He realized what "I won't lose next time" meant now, although it was too late.

"Hey, Natsuno was amazing right?"

"No, Kazama just seemed to lack spirit"

"You idiot, they both completely went past you three laps ahead, how could that be lacking spirit?!"

The voices of classmates could be heard rising here and there. They were critiquing Taiyou and Kazama's dead heat match which developed moments ago. Many of them were praising Taiyou, possibly regarding the great running they saw earlier.

"Taiyou-san, we're going to go ahead"

"I'll take the towel"

"See you later"

The three sisters spoke one after another based on height; took the towel from Taiyou, and left.

"Wait a second Suzu-chan, I'll hold the towel"

"It was decided that I will hold the towel this time, Kaza-chan don't snatch it away"

"It smells like Taiyou-san after all. After seeing the real thing it makes it so unbearable"

The girls headed towards the school building while noisily disputing about something. Before long, only the boys remained in the schoolyard. After the girls returned to class, it was the boys turn to change clothes. Taiyou thought about what he should do. He didn't have much free time before returning to class. He was bored and had not much time to do anything.

"Dammit, that Natsuno guy is getting carried away"

"Leave it me, I'll discipline him a little"

Taiyou called Hera and asked her about the conditions and how much experience he needed for the next level. He wondered if it was something that he could do steadily. At that time, while he was thinking that, he felt a human presence moving from out of nowhere.

—Don!

Suddenly, he felt something hit his shoulder. When he turned around, he noticed the appearance of his classmate falling on his back. It was a classmate named Saitou who had piercings and blonde hair. He fell on his back while looking at Taiyou with a shocked face.

“Oh, sorry”

Taiyou apologized while extending his hand. There were rumors that this boy had a rough temper and associated with bad people. Despite being a classmate, Taiyou always avoided dealing with this type of person as much as possible. However, it couldn't be helped that he was knocked down, so Taiyou apologized and extended his hand. But, that wasn't good. Saitou's face changed from astonished to angry in the blink of an eye because of Taiyou's action. He slapped Taiyou's hand away and stood up on his feet.

“You shouldn't be too full of yourself”

He said the incomprehensible remark as he walked away. Taiyou wondered what that was about while tilting his head to the side and looking puzzled.

“There are rumors about Natsuno-kun”

After school, Taiyou and Aoba walked beside each other. Taiyou parted with the three sisters in class and met up with Aoba in order to take her home. Aoba started speaking about such a thing while leaving the school gate. Taiyou tilted his head in confusion.

“Rumor? About me?”

“Yes, everyone was talking about today's P.E class”

“ah, was it about when I had a one on one with Kazama-kun? That was unpleasant. I forgot to restrain myself because I was thinking while running”

Taiyou said while regretting it. Although he had superhuman powers now, he had no intentions of showing it. Rather, it was better to completely hide his powers when they weren't necessary. He considered that pointlessly showing off would produce useless quarrels.

"There's that, but that's not all. I have not seen it, but there was also a rumor passing around about Saitou-kun"

"Saitou as well?"

"Yes, Saitou-kun purposely bumped into Natsuno-kun, but everyone is saying that it looked like he was knocked down by a Sumo Wrestler"

".....Ahh, so that's what it was about"

Taiyou understood the situation while listening to Aoba's story. At the same time, he also was thinking about restraining himself more habitually. He chatted with Aoba about the rumors, which were the topic of conversation for a short while, but she suddenly became less talkative. The closer she approached her house, the less she spoke. The reason being obvious, Taiyou intentionally said nothing, as they advanced towards the house.

They arrived soon. The Miyagi family's western-style mansion, maintained a vast amount of land, within a quiet residential area. Although Taiyou visited once before, in his eyes, it was like the castle of the last boss.

- 
1. Mikazuki: The word “発情期 (はつじょうき / Hatsujoyouki) means “Mating season; Estrus” I researched estrus and the simplest way to summarize it is “in heat”
  2. Mikazuki: “Dead Heat” is a movie about two men finishing in a tie. It normally means the race was extremely close.
  3. Nefarian: This guy literally just owned an elite athlete so easily without even knowing it? ahaha this cracks me up...

## CHAPTER 82

# THE THIRD BRIDE / CONFRONTATION BETWEEN MOTHER AND DAUGHTER

---

Their gaze swept across the Miyagi mansion. Aoba's uniform did not look suitable for one's home and she looked nervous. Her face stiffened as she tightly clenched her fist.

"It's Miyagi——"

"Natsuno-kun"

Looking at her appearance, Taiyou thought about proposing to come another day; however, the thought was suddenly interrupted.

"Let's go"

"Yea"

Taiyou nodded lightly and followed behind her. He wanted to ask her if she was still feeling ok to meet them, but to mention it now was irrelevant. They both entered the vast grounds and stood in front of the door. She was doubtful as she stood there doing nothing but the door made a deep sound and opened. Aoba passed through as if it was extremely natural. Taiyou had a feeling that not only was it not the time for visitors, but also the residents' personal time, and was a little shocked when it opened.

"Welcome back, Aoba-sama"

When Aoba entered the foyer, she was greeted by Miho who was in a maid outfit. Taiyou was still a little shocked in regards to Aoba's title, however considering the scene he saw the last time he visited, he expected it.

"I'm home, Mother. Is everyone here?"

"Only Atsuko-sama is inside, come in"

".....Only Mama. That's fine, I want to speak with her, is that ok?"

“I’ll guide you”

Miho led the two of them with a composed expression. She glanced over her shoulder at Taiyou but he couldn’t guess what she was thinking from the look.

It was because she did it so calmly.

Following Miho, Taiyou and Aoba were led into a different room from before. It wasn’t a reception room but it overflowed more with a lived-in feeling, like a cozy living room. Taiyou guessed that it was because Aoba was here and it was the room used for family.

“Sit down, Natsuno-kun”

Taiyou nodded and sat on the high quality sofa that was plentifully stuffed with a good filling. The quality of the level of comfort was excessive compared to the living room terrace in Taiyou’s Castle.

“Atsuko-sama will come soon”

“Mother”

Aoba called Miho as she was about to leave.

“Along with Mother as well”

“Certainly”

Miho bowed gracefully and stood near the wall. She refrained from doing anything which made her look like a servant.

Aoba said nothing in particular, probably because it was the way of the Miyagi family. After waiting for a while, the door opened and Atsuko came in.

Atsuko dressed completely different from Miho and looked like a wealthy celebrity. Based on the previous information from Aoba, Atsuko was reaching her forties, but she looked youthful as if she barely approached her thirties.

Taiyou remembered the words “beautiful witch” from back then.

“Welcome back, Aoba”

“Mama”

Aoba did not respond to Atsuko’s preemptive punch by saying welcome home. <sup>1</sup>

Atsuko’s eyes slightly wavered at the exchange while Miho’s face stiffened, but both of them reacted to such an extent that it would normally be overlooked, unless carefully evaluated.

(No, it was different! Even in that situation, the extent of the reaction was even more unusual)

Usually, “I’m home”being omitted is not enough to cause turmoil.

Taiyou reconsidered and focused his mind once again.

Atsuko sat facing Aoba while they both stared at each other.

“Well, are you finished running away from home?”

“No, I’m still not done yet, but I will be soon”

“Oh?”

The unexpected words surprised Atsuko.

“What do you mean? Isn’t it strange that you decided to sort out your feelings so suddenly?”

“Yes, I’ve already resolved to sort my feelings, therefore, it’s more of a distinction”

“I wonder where did you learn such a thing?”

Atsuko said as she turned towards Taiyou and gave him a flirtatious glance. The glance she gave him seemed to imply that he was a bad influence for her daughter.

That may or may not have been the case. Regardless, Taiyou decided not to say anything.

“Well then, what did you come back today for?”

“Because there is something I wanted to say to Mama and everyone. Is Mommy not here?”

“In a little bit. If you do have something to say, Miho and I are here, so you can say it”

“Mama and everyone are a parliamentary system right?”

Aoba unintentionally smiled. That somehow interested Taiyou. It was an unrelated matter however, thus the conversation advanced forward.

“I understand, well then, talk”

So Aoba started. Her face suddenly became tense and it was as if she turned into a completely different person. Taiyou was beside her and unintentionally had his breath taken away from the change.

Naturally, the two women opposite of them were astonished. Their face showed a hint of implying that they had never seen their daughter like this before. It was as if Aoba announced a declaration to them.

“That’s why I will do a DNA test”

“.....”

“.....”

Atsuko and Miho were at a loss for words because what Aoba said was too unexpected.

Taiyou thought that he understood their feelings. Suddenly returning and then saying such a thing face-to-face as well. He thought that surely the women would be two-times as shocked.

Aoba did not change her expression and looked straight at them both.

Somehow, Miho who composed herself easily before, reacted furiously.

“Aoba-sama! Do you know what you are saying!? Do not do such a thing as a DNA test!”



“So then, why won’t you tell me Mother? Who is my birth mother?”

“That..... is something I will not tell you..... at least by my own discretion”

“I do not deem it acceptable as well. That’s why I cannot tell you Aoba”

“Yeah, I know. I figured that mama and everyone would say that. That’s why I decided to investigate it myself”

“Students like Aoba-sama should not be able to do such a thing like that——”

As Miho started to speak, she suddenly realized something and glared at Taiyou. Her expression seemed to have eloquently implied “if hatred could kill a person”.

“Yes, I will cooperate”

“You’re a student as well right?”

“I’m not just a mere student. There aren’t many things I can do, but I can introduce Miyagi-san to the highest level of DNA testing agencies. “

“Won’t you give up? Is it fun to tear apart a person’s family?”

“It’s because I am not the type who enjoys leaving cracks. “<sup>2</sup>

Taiyou replied undauntedly. It was at this point that he started to lose his temper a little.

It was a series of events where they were only thinking of themselves, and in a way, ignoring their daughter. Taiyou could not approve of it regardless of the circumstances.

In other words, he strongly felt that he did not want to become that way. Considering he was building a similar family, the Miyagi family was a negative example, one which he could learn from their mistakes by watching them. That was why he opposed them.

“Please give up Aoba-sama. There is still time now”

“It’s useless Miho-san. Look at Aoba’s expression. It looks exactly like that guy from Toshiro. You should have well realized the stubbornness of such a face, don’t you

agree?”

“But.....”

“It seems you won’t give up. Either we tell you ourselves or you will investigate it yourself? You’re giving me the feeling that you won’t stop until you know the truth. Even if we forcibly stop you?”

“I will stop you with all of my might”

“Haa.....”

“Because I will”

Aoba quietly but distinctly nodded her head.

It seemed that she was already resolved.

“I understand, do it yourself. If that’s the case, I wonder why did you come here and ask me? If you were going to investigate, you could have investigated it alone. Couldn’t a DNA test be completed just by stealing hair in some way? What good did it do you by coming here?”

(That’s a good question)

“Because I like Mommy, Mama, and Mother. It’s because I love you”

“Is that so”

“Aoba-sama.....”

(That being said, do you understand now?)

Atsuko expressionlessly comprehended it while Miho understood but had a sour face.

Taiyou was slightly surprised by their expressions.

“I have understood what Aoba wanted to say and her feelings as well. However.....”

Atsuko seemed ok but narrowed her eyes.

Her atmosphere had completely changed. She majestically exuded the attractive sex-appeal of an adult, but now it had changed into an atmosphere that no one could get close to. If Shirokiyami emanated a blood-thirst like a sharp blade, Atsuko emanated an imitating air that reached the ceiling. For a moment, Taiyou felt like he was suffocating, despite there being nothing.

“I do not approve of it. I will not allow it”

“.....”

When Atsuko said that, Miho stiffened her face as well. She showed her willingness to follow her opinion by being silent.

“That’s our consensus. This is the one thing that we could never yield on. Does Aoba still have an intention of doing the test?”

“Yes”

“I understand”

Atsuko said after nodding slightly.

- 
1. Normally when someone comes home, they say “Tadaima/ I’m home” and the person at home says “Okaerinasai/ Welcome home” Atsuko greeted Aoba as per custom but Aoba did not return the proper greeting.
  2. He means that he does not like unfinished business or ignoring a problem.

# CHAPTER 83

## THE THIRD BRIDE / PLEASE GIVE ME YOUR DAUGHTER

---

Silence flowed between the mothers and daughter. A heavy air dominated the battlefield and everyone was making an expression as if they did not know what to say. They slightly diverted their gaze while trying not to make eye contact. The situation could not be helped at this rate because even if the silence ended, they would depart without having an important conversation. Taiyou thought that there was no choice but to introduce a powerful medicine. After comparing different simulations in his brain, Taiyou turned and spoke to Aoba.

“Miyagi-san, do you mind stepping outside?”

“huh?”

“There is something that I want to say to Atsuko-san and Miho-san, may you give me some time? It won't be a long so I'll finish it quickly”

“.....but”

“You finished what you wanted to do right? At this point, what can you do? No, what do you wish to do? You wanted to tell the truth because you did not want to do the DNA Test? To put it bluntly, even if you are here, your mothers will never tell you the truth. You understand that right?”

“That is...”

“If you have something to say, you should say it. If not, give me a little time and I'll be happy”

“.....I understand”

There was hesitation but eventually Aoba nodded slightly and stood up. After reluctantly gazing at Taiyou and the two mothers, she walked out of the living room

looking discouraged. Once she left, Taiyou turned towards the two mothers again.

“Excuse me”

“So, what do you have to say?”

“I will say it bluntly. I’ve fallen in love with Miyagi-san”

“.....huh?”

“.....pardon?”

Atsuko and Miho were caught off guard and looked confused. From their expression, it seemed that they assumed Taiyou would say something much more serious, and looked more shocked than he expected.

“What are you talking about?”

“I’ve fallen in love with Miyagi-san. From now on, I will court her..... I intend to get her to fall for me”

“No, not about such a thing. Where did all the talk about DNA test go?”

“Ah, that?”

Taiyou smiled. He didn’t really care about that and made a facial expression that implied so.

“That is Miyagi-san’s story. Furthermore, it is the circumstances of your family. Thus, it is essentially unrelated to me..... Am I wrong?”

“You’re not wrong”

As she spoke, the perplexed appearance faded from Atsuko’s face. It was such a face that showed that even now, she could not keep up with the unexpected conversation.

“It’s really an unimportant discussion from my point of view. Furthermore, to put things bluntly, perhaps even Miyagi-san doesn’t care about it”

“Why do you think so?”

“There should to be four test results. Besides someone from the three of you, I think that the fourth result, someone else entirely, could possibly be the birth mother”

“Did you not think about the possibility that her father is different?”

“You said earlier that Miyagi-san was becoming similar to her father. Furthermore, Miho-san was convinced. I don’t know the reason why, but you are all convinced that Miyagi-san’s current father is her real father. Am I wrong?”

“.....You’re not wrong”

Miho nodded seriously and answered.

“I swear by the Gods of Heaven and Earth that what I’ve said is the truth. We have also been expressing that to Aoba-sama the entire time”

“Well, taking that into consideration, I guess there can be no more than four outcomes”

“I predicted that outcome before we recommended the DNA test to Miyagi-san. She said that whatever the outcome, she will still love you all as her mother’s for the rest of her life. Even if, for example, none of you are her birth mother”

“If that’s the case, there should be no need for you to investigate”

“I think that you are saying that the remaining unpleasant feelings and my discussion are different. Indeed, it’s unrelated to my position as a bystander and I even said earlier that it’s unimportant. However, from my point of view, I think the future of Miyagi-san, who I have fallen for, is important”

“You, speaking in this overly clear-cut attitude, is making me feel unpleasant you know?”

To the astonished Atsuko, Taiyou calmly asks her a question in return.

“Can you tell me one thing? How did you feel when Miyagi-san’s dad made his clear-cut decision?”

“.....Well, now that I think about it, I felt a little bad”

“For me, even now, I’m still just as happy”

“In other words, it’s like that. The story has gotten off of topic so I’ll return to the main point. I love Miyagi-san. My family..... I intend to bring her into my family. To do that, I’ve considered telling you in advance. So it’s ok if you and Miyagi-san have a falling out. You can leave her to me”

Taiyou said while turning his gaze towards Atsuko and Miho. Taiyou consistently appeared carefree as he looked at the two women. They finally overcame their shock and returned a harsh look.

“Do you intend to fan the flames of this crisis?”

“Frankly speaking, it’s in the event that it gets to that level”

“In the event?”

“I have decided that my objective is to win over Miyagi-san and become happy together. I won’t choose the way to do it nor have a preference for how it gets done. If you lot want to argue with her and this causes your family to be broken, that is also fine with me, I will just use that to my advantage and comfort her broken heart. No matter which way the dice falls, if I cannot achieve the best solution, I will just aim for the second solution, it’s that kind of story”

When Taiyou said that, Miho glared at him. Taiyou thought that she was much more straight-forward than Atsuko, although she had the behavior and appearance of a maid. On the other hand, Atsuko remained calm and replied with a cold tone.

“Even if you say that, it doesn’t seem like that’s one of your strong points”

“I have two wives and they will cooperate with me in matters of a woman’s heart”

“.....”

“.....”

The three people glared at each other. Before long Atsuko sighed, leaned all of her bodyweight against the couch, and looked up towards the sky.

“I give up. It seems to me that if you are this stubborn, you will really grab a complete hold of Aoba’s heart”

“I will tell you that that’s not my only intention. I’m going through this much trouble right now, because I want her to be able to return home to her parents”

“It does sound plausible”

“Atsuko-sama, there’s no way you could have been fallen for such a story right?”

“I won’t tell them,..... I can’t tell them. That will not be changed”

Miho looked very relieved when Atsuko denied telling him.

“Therefore, even if we don’t want to compromise, we are going to be forced to compromise..... Were you trying to say something like that?”

“Yes, that is precisely right”

Taiyou nodded. It was a means to an end. There was no need to be fussy but he did not change his stance.

“In other words.....”

“I’ll perform the examination my own way. You all can deny it and not say who is the birth mom, but Miyagi-san will still insist that she is the daughter of you three. Afterwards, I hope you will welcome Miyagi-san back as if nothing has happened—and still think of her as your daughter”

“Naturally we will!”

Miho said loudly.

“This is fairly one-sided of you”

Atsuko gave Taiyou a cold-hearted look as she put emphasis on the word “you”.

“After all, it’s an original proposition I came up with based on my circumstances “

“You’re that kind of child? You were more frivolous when I met you before, or I should



say, you were much more hesitant”

“Regarding that, it’s thanks to you”

Taiyou said while placing his hands on his knees and bowing deeply. Those words came from his true feelings.

“The last time we met, I thought about the words that you said to me after I returned home. Almost through the entire night. That is why I developed such a way of thinking”

“When I gave that speech, I did not think that it would come to this. I merely advised you to possess strength”

“Miyagi-san will be my strength”

“Are you serious?”

“Of course”

“.....So Miho-san. What should we do? Isn’t it troublesome because only the two of us are here? We could have postponed it if it was only one person”

“Well, if our opinion is divided.....”

“Does it seem divided? It seems like I will become unanimous for some reason or another. After all, there is no other way”

“.....”

“Well, I guess it’s fate right?”

Atsuko sighed and turned to Taiyou.

“I understand. That’s fine”

“Thank you very much”

“However, there is one condition. I’ll decide after seeing it, I wonder if you will agree or not?”

“What could it be?”

“Confess to Aoba while being in this house. I’ll be able to judge your seriousness if I see that”

## CHAPTER 84

# THE THIRD BRIDE / REVERSE CONFESSION

---

Taiyou arrived in front of Aoba's room and stopped his feet. He secretly thought that this would never happen. There seemed to be no great solution for the problem of Aoba and her three mothers. He did not understand why Atsuko and the others hid who Aoba's birth mother was, but he felt that they had no intention of speaking even if they would die.

On the other hand, Aoba clearly could not move forward because of the adolescent peculiarity called stubbornness, causing her to go as far as running away from home. Driven by a sense of competition, Atsuko became even more stubborn because of that. It was a vicious cycle. There was no indication in one way or another that persuasion or preaching was possible. It was not a problem that could be solved by playing the side of gender equality. Therefore, Taiyou decided to attack it from a completely different point of view. He brought up some type of unusual negotiation, trying to find a breakthrough, and got caught up in a complicated story. It can be said that it achieved success in some way.

He did not quite know about the composed Atsuko but at least Miho recognized him as the ringleader who tempted Aoba, and turned her anger towards him. It can be said that it seemed he accomplished his goals of redirecting the parent's hatred towards himself. To get that far was amazing, but then Atsuko proposed something unthinkable. That he should confess right now.

She had a faint smile on her face immediately after saying that. From what Taiyou experienced with Kohaku and Sakura, he preferred probing for one's true intentions, and somehow understood Atsuko's true motive.

Maliciousness.

There was no need for Taiyou to confess to Aoba at this moment. There was no need to at all. That's why it was nothing more than Atsuko's revenge. Bringing up some type of unusual negotiation and using it against a shocked man, was meager revenge.

Words hold power. Particularly in this situation, even if it was a joke, he could not help but to obey. After all, Atsuko is a mother, and Taiyou said that he likes her daughter. Furthermore, she said that she would allow him to do as he pleases if he accepted her proposition. In some way, it was a very justified argument, so there was no reason for Taiyou to refuse.

And so, arriving in front of Aoba's room, Taiyou could not help but to have a bitter smile. Half of it was the enjoyable sensation of outwitting her and the other half was the fun of arguing back and forth.

".....Now"

He sorted his feelings and took a deep breath once. His facial expression changed quickly as he looked up. It changed from a bitter smile to the face of a well-defined man.

Knock Knock. Knock Knock.

Two knocks were repeated twice, based on manners he learned from Kohaku.

"Mother? "

Taiyou heard Aoba's reply from within the room. Taiyou thought whether Miho would knock that way and guessed correctly, considering who she pinpointed.

"I want to talk to you about something, but can I come in?"

"Huh, Natsuno-kun? A minute, wait a minute"

He heard a slapping sound from within the room and judged that she was rushing.

"Suu, haa, suuhaa. In, please come in"

After awhile, she gave him permission to enter. Taiyou turned towards the door and entered.

It was a fancy room like a girl's. He noticed that she was indeed rushing to change her clothes. She sat in a chair and was dressed in plain clothes. She appeared to be in her usual straight ponytail, blue mini dress, and coordinated black knee-high socks. Her

thigh that could be seen between the top of knee and hemline of the skirt, and her kneecap that was transparent through her brand new knee-high socks, made Taiyou's chest tighten.

"Excuse me"

While suppressing his rapidly beating heartbeat and pretending to be calm, he closed the door behind him.

"Natsuno-kun, have you finished your conversation?"

"huh? No, it starts... now"

For a moment, he thought that was an indirect rejection. Although he had not begun talking about anything yet, he misunderstood being asked "if the conversation had ended"

(Do not be too conscious.....)

While secretly smiling faintly, he changed his attitude.

"The conversation with Atsuko-san and Miho-san?"

"Yea"

"Well you could say something or another came from it. Is it ok to tell you?"

Keeping in mind what Taiyou asked, Aoba's body became stiff, and it was obvious that she was nervous. She was nervous earlier but now it became more obvious that she was nervous now. Instead of Taiyou who calmed down, her nervousness was caused by a misunderstanding. A faint mischievous side begin to bud in Tayou but considering it was not necessary at the moment, he threw it out of his mind.

"Actually..... I, I have fallen in love with Miyagi-san"

"..... eh?"

Plenty—— after truly freezing for no less than ten seconds, Aoba finally squeezed out a voice. It was the reaction that seemed to have witnessed something extremely

unexpected. Furthermore, puzzling over it three and a half times, and then seeming to have an accepting reaction. Compared to Atsuko and the other's reaction, Taiyou felt that Aoba's was refreshingly pleasant.

"What, what are you talking about Natsuno-kun?"

"I like you, I love you"

"na na na na na na——"

Taiyou did not mince words and chose to speak in a way that did not leave any room for misunderstandings. Aoba who was confessed to, panicked on a grand scale.

"What are you saying Natsuno-kun!?"

"I love you"

"No! That's not it. What's the matter all of a sudden?"

After saying it, Aoba made a surprised facial expression as if she realized something.

"It can't be. You said something to Mama didn't you?"

"It had to be Atsuko-san? You don't believe that it was Miho-san?"

"It's because Mother isn't someone who instigates you. If I make that assumption, then it is the type of thing Mama would do"

"Oh, now I understand. I believe you"

"It's as I expected after all..... what is Mama doing?"

"That's not the case. I was told to said something I said earlier, but it's not like that"

"Then, what do you mean?"

"When I told Atsuko-san and the others that I love Miyagi-san, they told me that they would accept me as soon as I confessed. "

"..... eeeeeeeehhhhhh?"

There was a short pause and then Aoba was astonished on a grand scale again.

“In other words, I was told to convey my feelings properly”

“Fe, fe fe fe feelings?”

“I like you”

“whah!”

Taiyou repeated his confession. After he did, he could see Aoba becoming extremely flustered. It was way too unexpected and sudden. She was so cute that Taiyou wanted to embrace her with all his strength.

“Jo... Stop joking Natsuno-kun”

“I’m not joking, I’m serious”

“But, you suddenly said such a thing.....”

“If that’s the case, wait until you are calm. Then, will you consider if I’m not serious or not?”

He said while looking straight at Aoba. The gaze that Taiyou gave her caused her to panic lightly but he did not say anything afterwards. Aoba gradually calmed down after seeing that his eyes were serious. After staring at the look on Taiyou’s face for a while, Aoba quietly asked a question in return.

“Why do you like me?”

“Do I need a reason?”

“Yes, it’s necessary”

Aoba answered immediately without hesitation. Thus, Taiyou responded.

“It seems that it was during the daytime when we talked in the hallway? That time, your face just before returning to the classroom..... There’s no way to explain it. I fell in love the moment I saw it”

“During the day..... that”

“Yeah? Does anything come to mind? Could it be that you remember the face you made?”

“Ah, no, that’s not it”

Aoba crossed her hands and hastily denied it.

“That... time?”

“Yeah, that time, was when I fell in love with you”

“.....but, Natsuno-kun. You have Hayakawa and the others that I met this morning——”

“Yeah, that’s right. I already have girlfriends. That’s why I’m saying it like this——I also like you”

“You want me to be in your harem as well?”

Aoba asked in return. The panic that remained in her voice until a while ago had already disappeared. She calmed down and asked him with a serious tone.

“That’s right”

Taiyou nodded clearly without glossing it over or expressing it in different words. If there was a need for someone to make an excuse, this was the situation. Now however, Taiyou believed that there were times when excuses were not necessary.

Aoba looked downward for a short while. While slightly biting her lip, her face looked like was considering things but hesitation was intervening. Taiyou waited and was prepared to wait forever. He thought that he could wait forever if he was able to know her feelings. Eventually——,

“.....Natsuno-kun, I also have something to say to you”

“.....what?”

“I also... may have fallen for Natsuno-kun”



“huh?”

This time, it was Taiyou’s turn to be confused. He didn’t expect her to say something like that. He didn’t imagine it in the slightest.

## CHAPTER 85

# THE THIRD BRIDE/ I'M SCARED OF A HAREM

---

As one would expect this was something that surprised Taiyou. When he cross-examined it with his own memories of the first time they met, he was sure that the first thing she said to him was that she hated him. Afterwards, it was not like they got any closer. Therefore, suddenly hearing the fact that she may potentially like him, was something that would naturally make him astonished. Consequently, he had to clarify the matter with her.

“S-Since when?”

“I may have a slight father complex”

Without answering his question directly, Aoba suddenly makes her own confession.

“I loved my father, no, it’s better to say that I still love him. Since a long time ago, I’ve always felt that my father is really cool. He cherished me. Whenever I got sick or when I got hurt, he would always be there to take care of me. He’s my amazing father... but at times like this, he’s mostly expressionless”

“I see”

Nodding his head, Taiyou chimed in.

“There was a time when I thought that he was being cold towards me, but I was wrong. I understood that father took very good care of me and valued me. When I was sick, he worked really hard to do various things. Therefore, gradually I started to think that being able to keep his emotions under control like that made him a really cool father. That’s because he usually laughs so much and acts kind of awkwardly, but only when it was necessary would he zone in and become expressionless”

“Right, that does seem cool”

Different from the first time, Taiyou nodded quite clearly this time. When push comes to shove, he acted without panicking or being flustered and became serious and

accomplished what was necessary. Without a doubt such a characteristic is something even other males can look up to. The reality was that Taiyou did admire her dad to a certain extent.

“That’s why I’ve always loved my father. Also, my father doesn’t act like this just towards me, it’s also the same with my mothers. Mom... back then she had some sort of big illness, I’m not sure exactly what it was but I think she had cancer”

“Is that so?”

Taiyou recalled the appearance of the other mistress which was not in this house right now. When he thought about it, he could also sense that in comparison with Atsuko and Miho, she seemed to possess this ephemeral atmosphere.

“Back in those days, father was always like that. Working with all his might for mom’s sake. Always making time so that he would be able to be next to mom. Father did these kinds of things for us all the time. To mama and to mother. Therefore, in all honestly, even if my mothers increase by one more person..... I thought that if it’s a person that dad chose, it would be fine”

“Ahh”

This time, Taiyou made a small nod. He was able to figure it out somehow. At first, although she did run away from home because a fourth mother was going to be introduced to her family, before she knew it, she had already gotten over it. For Aoba, the important part was finding out who her birth mother really is.

“I loved that kind of father. It was to the extent that I developed a slight father complex”

“Does that have anything to do with me?”

After thinking that her story was completed, Taiyou abruptly changed the topic of conversation. The feelings Aoba had for her father... in addition to the strong bonds she had with her mothers were conveyed to Taiyou. But leaving things as they were, was only going to make things worse. That’s why he planned to correct things starting from now. It was at this moment that Aoba looked towards him and gave him a sweet smile.

“I think that Natsuno-kun, kinda resembles my father a little”

“Is that right?”

“Yes, when you were talking with Hayakawa-san and Azumaya-san you really looked like my father when he was talking with my mothers, and when you fought with that white girl, your serious expression also resembled my father”

“My face...?”

“Especially when we were talking last night, I really felt the same kind of vibe from you. And that’s when I thought that you were a good person”

“So that’s how it was...”

“Yes, Natsuno-kun looks like my dad and the girls around Natsuno-kun look like my mother’s... And I thought that it just looked so good”

“Does it really look good? I thought that you denied this type of a relationship?”

“Up until now, I’ve always hated people who cheat. But neither dad..... nor Natsuno-kun are cheaters”

“That’s for sure”

Without hesitating, as if there was no other way to interpret it, Taiyou gave a clear nod of agreement. Although there might be people who have a different interpretation, Taiyou believes that his relationship with the girls isn’t something that is fickle.

“Therefore, I think I might have fallen for you”

“Might”

Taiyou feels caught up in her final word.

“Yeah, I don’t really understand it clearly. Is that really the case, or is it just my imagination? I don’t know yet”

“I see...”

“But the thing is, Natsuno-kun”

“Yeah?”

“I’m scared to enter a harem”

She didn’t say that she didn’t want to, but that she was scared. Looking at the face of the girl who spoke, she certainly seemed to be frightened.



“Miho-san, tea”

Atsuko who was in the living room asked Miho for more tea. If you were to see the appearance of the two interacting with each other, 10 out of 10 people would immediately think that it was a relationship between a celebrity and her maid.

However, in actual fact the two women equally loved the same man and there was no such thing as who was on top or who was below. At the very least... for the two people and also for the other woman who had something to take care of outside of the house right now... these three people had equal rights amongst each other.

Nevertheless, Atsuko was very laid back whilst Miho seemed to be in charge of undertaking the housework around the house. Other people may not be able to understand their relationship, however, to them this was something natural and it was something that they were happy with. Although Atsuko abided by this type of relationship, she was acting restless right now, and her unsettled appearance was showing.

“Atsuko-sama, this is your seventh cup, I think that it may be good to hold back a little”

“Uu, but”

Being rejected her extra serving of tea, Atsuko moaned like a child, and without being able to calm down, she stared at the wall. Beyond her glance was Aoba’s room, she seemed to be really uneasy and to top it off she started to unconsciously fidget.

“Atsuko-sama, even if you worry so much, nothing will happen. I think that it would

be better to calm yourself”

“Uu, Miho-san is so cold. Aren’t you anxious about Aoba?”

Different from when she was in front of Taiyou, Atsuko gave a feeling that her mental age became quite childish. Although she seemed like the mistress of the house, the things she said were totally child-like.

“Although I am, but there is nothing we can do at present. What I can do is to assume the worst case scenario, and make preparations for that time”

“Worst scenario?”

“Yes, if it turns out that Aoba-sama and that person truly love one another, I would not be required. I will only be required if it turns out that Aoba-sama and that young boy do not have a close relationship”

“Do you really think..... they would have mutual affection?”

“What does Atsuko-sama think?”

Miho threw back the question that she was just asked. Atsuko thought for a little before answering.

“That boy, don’t you think he resembles Tousei?”

“What are you saying? In this world there is no person in existence that is capable of being compared to our Supreme Master”

Without any hesitation, Miho declared her strong beliefs. Perhaps listening to her speak made her feel more calm, but Atsuko started to ask again in her smoother manner of speaking.

“No I mean his family lineage, and his inclinations. Don’t you think they might have some sort of low connection?”

“If it’s about that... let me think; I think that he may have the same blood type O?”

“That’s a little generalized, can you elaborate a little more”

“That would be difficult for me to ascertain. That’s because thinking that anyone resembles Master, is something akin to a large disrespect”

“Really? Well I think that he’s quite similar. Especially when he gets angry..... or when he loses his temper. Didn’t you notice it? The eyes that boy had today, it looked really dangerous you know?”

“.....Yes, a mixture of both stubbornness and recklessness, these are common traits that a young person may have. Thinking about important things alone would probably aggravate his emotions”

“Yeah, I think so. Miho-san probably doesn’t know about this but, when Toshiro was young, during his high school days, he would often have those kind of eyes. Recently, he’s settled down a lot and gives off this really mature vibe but... Well, that single-minded earnestness of his is really similar, whilst he is still young I suppose that it is fine to behave this way”

Atsuko and Miho were both looking in the direction of Aoba’s room.

“I wonder what Aoba thinks of that kind of boy.....”

“Should we stop them? If it’s now I think there is still time”

“...What do you think will happen if a parent tries to interfere with their child’s love life?”

“.....Either it will turn out to be a trivial matter, or it may require a greater resolution  
“

“I agree. Trying to break them apart... may make things worse”

“I’ve heard this before. It isn’t good for a parent to decide something for a child, even if it is appropriate to help them, the decision should be made by the child. Especially when deciding on things like their own university course, a big decision is more reason for a child to make their own decision”

“I’ve heard of that before as well. When a parent decides things for their child, if later in life things turn out badly, they may start blaming their parents in order to create an excuse for themselves. But as for me, I don’t really mind it even if she ended up having

a grudge against me.....”

“Making the decision for her will not benefit Aoba-sama. Doing something that will not benefit her requires consideration——”

Miho replied immediately.

“That’s just the way life is! It can’t be helped. Miho-san, another serving of tea please. Until this ends, let’s just drink together”

“.....Understood”

Without Aoba knowing it, her mothers were really worried about her.



## CHAPTER 86

# THE THIRD BRIDE/ SERIOUS CONFESSION

---

Going back in time a little, inside of Aoba's room. After she frankly mentioned that she was "scared", she showed Taiyou a frightened expression. Showing him such a feminine and weak side of her, Taiyou's desire to protect was stirred up. Settling down his mind, he asked her a question.

"...Is that perhaps due to the fact that your parent's were like that as well?"

When seeing it from Taiyou's perspective, no just judging from the current situation it was a proper question to ask.

"Yeah, but, I think that it is a little different to what Taiyou is thinking of"

"Different from my thoughts?"

"Yes. You know, my mothers are really close with each other. Even when they are happily talking with each other, or when they are flirting with dad... Even when they are in a big fight with each other. Umm, do you understand... What I'm trying to say?"

"I don't understand it completely but, I can appreciate that they are close enough to have a big fight with each other and remain close friends. Even after having such a quarrel, there aren't any future troubles created, right?"

"I don't know if it won't create future implications but, they are able to use the topic they argued with and make fun of each other with it. Because I used to see this every day, it became a normal occurrence, but if other people were to see this, they would normally become really nervous"

"I see, they really get along with each other don't they?"

Taiyou nods and imagined the scene.

In other words, to describe what Aoba meant is that they were the type of people who would express their true feelings to each other without reserve. Because Taiyou

doesn't have this kind of relationship just yet he couldn't totally relate to it, but on the contrary because he didn't have this in his relationship yet, he understood how difficult it was to achieve such a state.

"That's why I'm afraid. If I truly reach this kind of a relationship with Natsuno-kun, will I be able to..... still get along with the other girls that Natsuno-kun like? I think that I will surely——"

Breaking off her words mid-sentence, she looked straight at Taiyou.

"—— Be a jealous girl"

Jealousy. Taiyou was startled at hearing this word. This was something that he did not encounter in his life yet. Right now he has two brides. Neither of them have ever mentioned such a feeling, and not even the word has been said. Especially for the three sisters, since the beginning they were the ones who wanted Taiyou to get together and create a harem with Kohaku, so they never showed him such an emotion. Although they may have mentioned being envious as a joke occasionally, it was not something that would make them feel distressed. Therefore, because Taiyou's first experience in dating were the three girls, feelings of envy that a girl may have, completely slipped his mind.

Only for an instant—— Taiyou felt really shaken up.

In the time he took to think, there was plenty of things he decided, one of the things he decided was for him not to waver. He was resolved to gather seven women in his harem and he was prepared to make all the members happy. Even without Atsuko telling him, he realized that in order to accomplish these goals, he needed a big amount of power. It wasn't as simple as just gathering seven women, but in order to keep them all happy, he needed a power beyond his imagination. In order to gain such a strength, he concluded that hesitation and the like is worthless. That's why, he instantly recovered his wavering mind.

"Hera"

He spoke out not towards Aoba, but towards an empty space where nobody existed. He didn't know if she was nearby, he didn't know if she was listening to the conversation. However, Taiyou had belief. He believed that she would arrive within a

short period of time to appear before him.

Hera was fundamentally connected to the deepest portion of this human being named Natsuno Taiyou. If he called out to her, no matter the time or place, she should rush towards him. That's what he believed. As was expected, it was just like Taiyou had thought.

"Yes, okay~ Did you call out for me Taiyou-chan?"

"Yeah, I called you. In a certain way, you are quite the easy woman aren't you? Because whenever I call, you will appear"

"Fufufu~n, that's of course. After all I exist for Taiyou-chan nanodesuyo~"

"I've become accustomed to the way you speak without noticing it these days"

Saying that Taiyou turned towards Aoba.

"Although one thing led to another, you are able to see her figure right?"

"Y-yes"

Aoba drew back a little. Being able to see a non-human existence, Taiyou supposed that it was a natural reaction for her to have.

"In that case, I want to introduce you to her. Her name is Hera. Now that you mention it, do you have a full name other than just "Hera"? Or are you fine with that?"

At this late hour?! Shouldn't you know her name by now? Was the kind of face Aoba was showing to Taiyou.

"I don't really have any other name~ If I was forced to say, I would call myself Natsuno Hera desuyo~"

"Well you heard her, apparently she's Natsuno Hera. Well her name is a trivial matter, as you can see from her appearance, she seems to be a fairy"

"It is actually very important desu"

"Hm?"

“Names are extremely important”

“That’s what you meant?!”

“Umm, this... person? Eh, or more like... that thing... what is it?”

“I am the fruit born from Taiyou’s love”

“Ehhhhhhh?!”

“Can you stop with saying something that can be misunderstood?”

Taiyou gave Hera a smack on the head and asked Aoba.

“You knew that I used to play a lot of games until a little while ago, right?”

“Yeah, you always played in the classroom, Natsuno-kun was really quite famous for it”

“Undoubtedly it wasn’t a good kind of famous. But well, that doesn’t really matter anymore. Playing games like that I always fostered and levelled up my characters until they were the strongest they could be. The embodiment of that passion is Hera. Therefore, please don’t mistake it with the other meaning”

“I-Is that so...”

“If you were to ask me what she is... Hera, please show her”

“Eh? Ah that’s right desu, if I don’t show them at least once, they won’t get it~”

Hera poked herself on the side of the head. While winking, she stuck her tongue out. Considering her size, this was an extremely cute gesture.

“Then here it goes~, there we go~”

“Eh..... eh, ehh, ehhhhhh?”

Aoba was bewildered as she raised her voice for some reason. Outwardly nothing has changed, but Taiyou knew what was occurring to her.

Right now she was experiencing something Kohaku referred to as “information and numbers flowing between the back of her eyeballs and her back teeth”. If a torrent of numbers just suddenly appeared in front of your eyes, it is natural to be surprised.

“T, this is?”

“It’s my status. It quantifies my abilities numerically”

“.....It feels like I’m in a game”

“That’s exactly right, it’s like an RPG. This is the power that Hera gave me, with this I am able to have more abilities than the average human being.

“Ah... Is this why you were capable of winning against our school marathon runner Saito-kun in physical education?”

“Yea, it’s thanks to this. Because marathons are probably about speed and physical strength”

“Your value on strength is really high...”

“That’s my highest numerical value. If I hit concrete I can break it apart, and perhaps if I was given sufficient time, say around 10 minutes, I can make a whole building crumble and turn the area into a vacant land”

“I..... see”

Aoba was astonished. This was just so unrealistic but it was a fact that she could see Hera, and she also saw the scene that occurred during his physical education class. Although this was not what Taiyou really wanted to show her.

“Miyagi-san, can you please turn your attention to the last status number? The last one and the one before that”

“Eh, the last one?..... Ah”

Aoba was taken aback. Looking at the two numerical values Taiyou told her to. One of the numbers was still at their lowest, and the other remained in a bugged state.

- Harem 65535(-16383)

- Popularity 0(+0)

“Could this be...?”

“That’s because I currently have two people in my harem”

“Two people? Isn’t it four...?”

“Ahh, I haven’t explained that have I? Then I guess for now you can assume that it’s four people”

If he had to explain about the three sisters right now, it would derail the conversation, so he left that aside for now.

“I think that the cause of this is because I was able to make a harem with four people in it. And I just noticed that this is perhaps what you mean when you said that you were afraid”

“W-What do you mean?”

“It’s a simple thing. Although I am extremely unpopular..... I can still get along with a part of the people in my harem. A person who is unpopular will probably remain unpopular, but once you enter my harem I think that this harem numeric figure will help us get along”

“This thing... Does it have an influence on my mind?”

“Kotone and Kohaku have told me that it doesn’t affect their minds”

Remembering the words, they told him, happiness gradually spreads in his heart.

“The reason it’s at such a value, is because I want it to be that way. This is what I believe and that’s why I will interpret it as such”

Taking a pause, he looked straight at Aoba. A piercingly direct look.

“I think that this is not the ability for me to create a harem, instead it’s the ability for

me to maintain a harem. I decided that anyone who enters my harem, will be happy without exceptions. Therefore, you don't need to be worried, as long as you're with me... I will make sure that no matter what you fear, I will make you happy “

Taiyou declared so. Without wavering in the slightest, he powerfully finished his sentence. Although in normal circumstances a person may doubt what he was saying, but because of his tone and the determination in his voice, there was this feeling that any rebuttal was not going to be permitted. In fact, it looked like Aoba's heart was deeply moved by it.

“Therefore, please abandon such worries and be with me. I will make you happy..... No, I will absolutely make it happen even in a numerical sense”

Taiyou shuts up and made another statement.

“Please make me happy”

There was nothing that he couldn't accomplish with his numerical figures. Taiyou strongly desired for Aoba to respond to his feelings.

## CHAPTER 87

### THE THIRD BRIDE/ APPROVED CONDITIONALLY

---

“Make Natsuno-kun..... happy?”

“That’s right”

Taiyou looked straight at Aoba. It was both coercion and pleading. Either way, there was no difference between the two in the desperate situation. The high stats and inhumane level that he reached until now was useless at this time. He interpreted that even having a harem stat of 65535, was only to maintain the harem itself. He could only make a desperate appeal to her.

“If I make Natsuno-kun happy, will I be happy as well?”

“You will”

Taiyou bluntly declared it. For that purpose, he was ready to do anything. He stared at her with a gaze full of burning passion. Aoba stared back at him but eventually cast her eyes downward and looked away. He wondered about the significance of her looking down. Taiyou became more impatient as he thought about it. He had to say something. No matter what effect it would have or how he would look.

He without a doubt fell in love with Aoba. He was able to declare such strong feelings with pride. He didn’t want to be rejected. He wanted to make Aoba his own and achieve his desires. Those were the strong feelings that swirled within Taiyou. He thought that he had to say something..... anything.

His feelings became stronger and more refined. In that moment, the scene before his eyes changed into something he never seen before. Taiyou saw the air and the world. For example, he saw the scenery around Aoba change colors. It was as if her aura materialized and could be seen. Taiyou swallowed the words that were leaving his throat. Words from this point on surely were not necessary. Such thoughts calmed him down.

Eventually, Aoba lifted her face. She had a face as if she was smiling despite being



worried. Simultaneously, it seemed that she had resolved to do something at the same time.

“Natsuno-kun, can you promise me..... just one thing? It’s my a wish I’ve always wanted”

“Tell me”

“My..... Our... Children, definitely tell them who their mother is”

As she said that, her face looked like it could burst into tears at any moment. Within the faint smile, a large teardrop accumulated in the corner of her eye. It was something that tormented her for a long time and she never wanted to make anyone else go through that. Taiyou embraced her gently. He held her shoulders and lightly caressed her head. He held her entire body closely, completely wrapping her.

“I promise you, I’ll make sure of it!”

Taiyou calmly spoke with determination. Aoba cried in his arms. Taiyou continued to caress her head until she was satisfied. Aoba stopped crying, raised her face from within his arms, and began to speak to him.

“Natsuno-kun. In addition to that, just one more. Can I request one more thing?”

She blushed as she said that. She looked ashamed of making another request after just asking her lifetime’s wish to be granted. It was too cute for Taiyou. He felt like he would drown and could not deal with it any longer.

“If you listen to my one wish”

“Y, yeah. I understand. What is Natsuno-kun’s wish?”

As she was saying that, Taiyou put his hands on her jaw and raised her head. Immediately after shocking her, he kissed her. He only felt the kiss. At that moment, his head became fuzzy. It wasn’t from simply touching her nor was it his first kiss. He had already experienced much more than just kissing. Even so, Taiyou felt so happy that his entire body felt like it was floating. When their faces separated, Aoba was blushing.

“Is this, Natsuno-kun’s wish?”

“That’s it. What is Miyagi-san’s wish?”

“Yeah..... that..... uhhh”

Aoba hesitated for a while.

“Can you do it, once more?”

As soon as her pleading echo left her mouth, Taiyou clung to her lips once again. The momentum shifted; nevertheless, the fact that he was kissing her soft lips satisfied his heart. There was a sweet atmosphere for a short while and time continued. Presently, Aoba felt more embarrassed than before.

“Natsuno-kun, that is... I have another... w... wish.....”

“Only if you grant my wish”

“Ye, yeah.....”

“The conversation is not progressing at all nodesu!”

Unable to just watch, Hera ruined the sweet mood and cut into the conversation. She yelled loudly while flying around Taiyou and Aoba in circles.

“Why!? We were in a good place”

“It’s not the right moment since the story is not advancing. Return to Taiyou’s castle and do it at night nodesu”

“N, Night——”

“Well, that’s that”

Aoba blushed magnificently at Hera’s words but Taiyou, unlike Aoba, comprehended and was in agreement with her. The feelings of excitement from the kiss was still rising, but for the time being, he controlled his sense of reason and calmed down.

“Well then, once again..... what is your request Miyagi-san?”

“Um, well... I thought I would ask you to let me stay there as well”

“At Taiyou’s Castle?”

“Yeah, the room I am using now. Ah, a different room is ok as well but I just want to stay there. That’s what I was trying to ask you”

“From my point of view, everything will work out, but is that really ok?”

“Yeah, that’s what I want to do”

“I understand. Then Hera, you return first. Can you let everyone know about what happened? Miyagi-san and I will go later”

“Yes! I will tell everyone and be back two hours later desuyo—”

“I didn’t tell you to come back after you left!”

“ahahahaha!”

Taiyou opened the window and Hera laughed as she flew away towards Taiyou’s Castle.

“Well, then... Shall we go?”

Taiyou gently softened his embrace and talked in a whisper.



In the living room at Miyagi residence.

Taiyou was standing and faced Atsuko and Miho.

“Therefore, please allow me to call you mother-in law from today on”

Taiyou said and then bent his waist and bowed deeply. Immediately following the first voice, Miho returned to the living room and stiffened. Atsuko was slightly taken aback and then sighed.

“So that’s the outcome?”

“Yes, that was the outcome”

“Aoba-sama, are you really ok with this!?”

“Yes, Mother”

“Please calm down and think well Aoba-sama. That boy has another woman. That is ——”

“Miho-san calm down— we’ve become too impatient if we deny this as well”

“Well, that and this are.....”

“The same. It’s different when it was still early but now, it’s not honorable for us to say that he has other women”

“Atsuko-sama..... Are you really ok with this?”

“Sooner or later, our daughter will become a bride. Besides, isn’t this way much better than running away from home?”

Atsuko said that while gazing at Aoba for a brief period.

“I do not know what was said nor done to Aoba, but she looks strangely clear-headed. Somehow, she looks like she does not care who her real mother is anymore. Rather than making things worse and running away, Aoba currently seems to be much happier living beside the man she loves. “

“But.....”

“Miho-san, you’re being too overprotective. If you are so inclined, will you try to decide for the majority?”

“.....”

“My other mother-in-law who is not here..... what is she like?”

“She’s somewhat different. For example, I let things take their own course and Miho-san is the overprotective type; therefore the other is the type who pushes their child

into a bottomless ravine”

“I see. Putting that aside, it means that everyone’s in agreement right?”

“You can say that. However, I’ll ask you one last time. Are you really ok with this Aoba?”

“Yep”

“I understand. Well then, idiot son” <sup>1</sup>

“You’re suddenly calling me your idiot son?”

Taiyou smiled bitterly, however, being called that did not feel bad.

“Give me your address”

“Address? What for?”

“In order to bring Aoba’s luggage altogether at once. Since she isn’t running away, I need to send her things for everyday life. Is saying such a thing necessary?”

“I agree. I understand”

“And one more thing. We will go and visit you tomorrow”

“Huh?”

“Miho-san, our lifelong dream. Shall we do it?”

Taiyou was shocked and perplexed by the unexpected development.

## CHAPTER 88

# THE THIRD BRIDE/ COMING FULL CIRCLE

---

“Geez, Mother...”

After leaving the Miyagi Mansion and on the way back to the closest train station. Aoba who was walking side by side with Taiyou, was pouting cutely. Although she wasn't showing a smile, the expression on her face was far more positive than compared with a few days ago. Taiyou was trying to endure himself from laughing as he asked her to clarify the issue.

“You're talking about that long-cherished dream that Atsuko-san mentioned aren't you?”

“Yes”

“By the way, do you know what it is?”

“Yeah, I do. There's something that mum always says jokingly. If I ever became a bride, there was something that she wanted to do.”

Aoba was leaving out some of the important specifics because she was embarrassed. Thinking that her appearance was just so cute right now, Taiyou asked to get more of the details.

“Oh, really and what exactly does she want to do?”

“.....Demon Mother-in-law”

“Oni shutome?”

In a slightly off sync accent, he repeated her words like a parrot. Having heard something that he's never heard in his life, Taiyou could not immediately catch the meaning of her words. The words kept going around in his mind and somehow a little while later, he was able to understand.

“Ahh, Demon Mother-in-law. Meaning she wants to bully her child’s husband-to-be?”

“Yes, Mother told me since I was young that if I ever got married she wanted to do this. She said she would make sure to torment her son-in-law to the fullest, whilst shouting in a really threatening manner.”

“Then again..... That really seems like something she would do”

Although he hasn’t been her acquaintance for very long, Taiyou already had an idea as to what kind of person Atsuko was. It’s easy to imagine that she will perform many template actions akin to bullying. Atsuko would have many tricky plans, That’s the kind of impression she gave him.

“Hmm but well, it’s probably going to be fine. If it’s Atsuko-san. I don’t think that she will pull moves like a professional wrestler or something”

“.....That’s naive, Taiyou-kun”

“What do you mean”

“The thing is, both Mother and Mama will join in”

“Eh”

“Mummy, Mama, and Mother. All three of them will combine their efforts and bully their future son-in-law to the fullest, they’ve always agreed upon this since a long time ago”

“.....That does seem kinda bad”

Especially Miho-san, Taiyou was secretly most afraid of her. Teasing, bullying and trying to break his mentality, if it was just Atsuko she would probably be using her mouth to verbally abuse him, meaning that as long as he responded in a mature way he would probably be fine, but if Miho was going to join in as well, this changes everything.

It’s likely that Miho was going to try various means to bully him. He only stayed in Miyagi’s house for a short period of time, but it was enough to understand. Miho did not approve of Taiyou’s relationship with Aoba. If a Mother-in-law does not approve

of her son-in-law, there is no doubt that there will be plenty of torment and conditions that the mother will set up against the son. At first he was thinking quite hard about what he could do, but little by little, he felt that he didn't really care about it anymore.

The existence of Aoba by his side allowed him to think in this way. She was close enough that her body temperature was transmitted via the air. He gently drew Aoba's shoulder into his embrace. It was a little forceful as a gesture, but at the same time, his hands were in all respects, very kind and gentle towards her. Suddenly having her shoulders embraced, Aoba was surprised and looked at him with widened eyes.

"Natsuno-kun?!"

Adjusting his pace to match hers, he asked her a question in a whispering tone of voice.

"What is your dream"

"Eh?"

"What is your future dream I heard what your request was a little while ago, but I don't think I've heard about your future dreams"

"I don't really—"

Aoba was seemingly going to say, she didn't have any dreams but then Taiyou interrupted her.

"Hearing about Atsuko-san and your mothers talk about their dreams, made me realize something. It's enough to make me imagine them talking in the past. I think that surely, they would have had so much fun whilst speaking merrily amongst each other"

"Yes, I think so. When they drank tea together they would often chit-chat about it. When they were talking about this topic, they would all get really excited and they seemed to have a lot of fun"

"I thought so, I can imagine it"

Nodding, he asked her again whilst still embracing her shoulder.



“So what is your future dream?”

“I.....”

Aoba was hesitating and so Taiyou decided to talk about his own dreams first.

“By the way, my dream is to make all of you bloom beautifully”

“Make us beautiful?”

“What is he talking about?” Aoba blinked her eyes in confusion.

“Making the woman you love become beautiful, isn’t that something people often say? I really want to confirm if it’s possible. Kohaku-san, compared to the first time I met her, you’d be surprised at how much more beautiful she’s become. So much so that I sometimes feel like my soul is being taken away when I look into her eyes, she’s become extremely beautiful that it makes me shiver. You might call me conceited, but I really believe that Kohaku has become so beautiful since she fell in love with me, and it’s because we continue to be in love.”

“That Azumaya-san?”

Aoba was muttering to herself. Taiyou understood the meaning behind her mutter. Taiyou places more power into the hand that held her shoulder.

“Kohaku-san has become like so, and I want to continue to keep her that way. Moreover, I want all the girls who are together with me to be in love for a very long time, and keep all of them blooming.”

Cutting his words short for a moment, he strengthened his resolve before saying it once more.

“That is my dream”

“Yes... I see, but how about Hayakawa-san and her sisters”

“That’s the thing”

Taiyou smiled ironically.

“Their dream is to create a harem, creating a harem, they want to be one of the people in it. I’m sure you’ve heard the expression, “falling in love with being in love” haven’t you? I think they are probably in love with the idea of being in a harem. Not really in love with me.”

“But, I think that they really do like Natsuno-kun”

“I don’t doubt it. But how do I put this?”

Taiyou scratches his head showing a bittersweet smile.

“Although this may just be my selfish desire, but one day I want to make them stop saying the word harem”

“.....You’re being jealous, aren’t you?”

“.....Perhaps.”

He showed a strained smile for an instant, but then he adjusted his expression back to normal.

“So, what about your dreams”

For the third time, the same question was asked. Aoba who was reluctant to speak a while ago, was now quiet as she carefully considered her answer. This time Taiyou also stayed silent, and without urging her on, he just waited patiently. They entered the shopping district from the residential area and the station came into view from far away. The number of pedestrian passer-by’s increased, there was even some people who looked with irritation at the two who embraced each other’s shoulder.

Ignoring these people, Taiyou just walks slowly. Before long, Aoba opens her mouth.

“I want to become like my mothers”

“Become like them? In what way?”

“My Mum, Mama and Mother. I want to be as close as they are with each other, laughing together, sometimes arguing and also crying together. I think that, they will always be there for each other forever..... I want to have that kind of relationship where we can

live happily for a long time”

Talking gracefully and slowly, her words were packed with emotion. Anyone who heard her talk would know that it was her true wish.

“It seems like I am not a part of that dream”

Taiyou spoke out teasingly, but not in an unpleasant manner. Imagining her getting along really well with his girls, somehow gave him this strange sense of happiness.

“Umm, that is..... I’m sorry”

“Ahaha, that’s alright, you don’t have to apologize. I kind of understand how you feel. Perhaps, your father also had the same feelings as me. Though that’s just my guess.”

“Natsuno-kun.....”

Aoba whispers his name. Taiyou stopped walking, he drew her even closer and gave her a light kiss. Aoba was blushing and he whispered into her ears.

“If that is your dream, I’m sure it will come true”

“Eh?”

“That’s because—”

Saying this, Taiyou turned his line of vision ahead. Following his gaze, Aoba also looks to the front. In that moment, the girl in his arms held her breath at the scene in front of her.

“Why.....”

“Do you even need to ask? I’m sure you already understand it yourself, don’t you?”

“But.....”

“They couldn’t wait any longer— for your arrival.”

Saying that, Taiyou pushes her back with the arm that was on her shoulder and sent her out. Yes, her dream will surely be fulfilled. You may even say that it was being

realized right now. Pushing her back gently he remained standing in place.

In front of the two people was, Kotone, Suzune, Kazane and lastly Kohaku. Over the other side of the ticket gate, these girls were waiting for her. The girls were impatient to meet their new family member, and they were so excited that they got on the train and came to pick her up.





PDF BY: TRAITORAIZEN